

No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 701-705

Chapter 701

“What would you kill him for? You’ll marry Cecilia Taylor in the future and we’ll be in-laws with the Taylor family. We’re deemed as one family by then hence there’s no need to slit his throat.”

The head of the Gold family orated straightaway.

“Father, Jack is snobbish and always going about with his nose in the air! Okay. Let’s just forget the fact that he insulted you and Grandpa but for the deed he did to the Gold family today, killing so many of our men, don’t you desire to avenge the dead? Besides, if the words go out of these walls, what’ll be the outcome? It’s shame and humiliation toward the Gold family! We challenged the other party to duels, not once but nine times. And guess what? We lost all nine rounds! None of our men had won even one round! Isn’t that embarrassing?”

Kelly’s expression stayed frosty. The more he looked back on the occurrence, the deeper the irritation welled up in his chest.

“We can’t shove all the blame onto Jack for this. On the contrary, I think the fault is on you! Who asked you to make such a bet with him? Moreover, it’s not a small and casual one. And you kept emphasizing, what, ‘it’s not unheard of to die in fights’? Now that his bodyguard has killed ours, you were saying?”

Master Ezra was not particularly delighted with his son’s behavior—parading his superiority and desire to prevail over others. He thought that this son of his was too impulsive and reckless.

“Hmmm, if we really want to kill off this guy, it’s actually not that painful.”

Old Master Gold tittered and continued, “However, I don’t think there’s a need to kill him right now. Did he not keep on advertising that the birthday party that he’s going to throw for Selena Taylor, will shake

the whole Eastfield? That this party will be the grandest and most indelible. Today, he'd shamed us all, so why don't we return the favor on that day?"

"You're right, Grandpa. If we end him right now, it would be too simple and painless for him. To shame him and humiliate him in front of thousands is a better idea!"

Old Master Gold's utterance knocked some sense into Kelly, he nodded to agree. "It just so happened that Cecelia had the desire to compare with Selena, and suggested having our wedding on the same day as the birthday party. This is an excellent opportunity to avenge ourselves! Just imagine, when the day arrives, all relatives of the Taylor family will come to our wedding instead of Selena's birthday banquet. Many guests of exalted rank will be present at our wedding and no one will go to theirs. Just the thought of it makes my mood soar!"

Old Master Gold bobbed to show unison. "When the time comes, we'll need to gather as much information as possible about their party. If they're preparing a dinner worth one hundred thousand dollars, then we'll throw one that's two hundred thousand. If they make it to five hundred thousand, we'll raise it to eight hundred thousand. In short, we have to make Jack realize what true wealth is!"

A gentle smile appeared on Master Ezra's face as well. "On that day, our event will be more magnificent and eye-catching than theirs will. By then, let's see how he can stand by his promise—a party that will shake the foundation of Eastfield!"

"Yeah! They even made a countdown just for the birthday party! And we did not even use such exaggerated moves! We'll wait until two or three days before the wedding and drop the bomb. It'll be a total humiliation to them when their advertisements are louder than ours but the event is not as happening as ours! Such a shame!"

A contented smug appeared at the corners of Kelly's mouth. The image of Jack's vein popped out in his neck and Selena's white blanched face was like a ray of warm sunshine flooding Kelly's soul—he would be flabbergasted with joy.

"Kelly, get several men to challenge Jack's female bodyguards someday."

Nevertheless, Old Master Gold had abruptly invaded Kelly's mind and broken his chain of imagination on Jack's and Selena's reactions. He did not expect such a question from Old Master Gold.

"Grandpa, what do you mean? What am I going to do with those female bodyguards?" Kelly's brows drew together.

"These female bodyguards are no vases, all of them are very skilled fighters. The thing that makes me worried the most is that I feel that they haven't revealed their full strength! Such combat prowess is no ordinary. So, try your best to find out, first, how much Jack pays them, then counteroffer with a higher pay and get them to work for the Gold family!"

Old Master Gold expressed his thoughts, slowly.

Young Master Gold stretched out his hand and gestured a thumbs up right after hearing Old Master Gold's thoughts. "Smart! Grandpa, your plan is smart! Those ten female bodyguards are indeed powerful and strong. If we could get them to work for us, it'd be marvelous!"

"Jack will spew blood to death by then! Let anger consume him, shall we?"

The head of the Gold family laughed aloud at the proposition as well.

Chapter 702

The next morning, Kelly went out with a few bodyguards to execute their ultimate plan.

He waited until Jack and Selena were both out only then he spent some money to dig out information about the female bodyguards from some servant of the Taylor family.

When he finally got hold of the salary information of the ten beautiful bodyguards, his jaw dropped to

the ground and his eyes widened. He was utterly shocked.

The combat strength and prowess of those bodyguards were beyond extraordinary. With such skill, fifty thousand dollars pay a month would not be an exaggeration.

The most overriding fact was that each of these gorgeous bodyguards possessed long and deceptively delicate legs. If the hirer was some young master of prominent families, they would be willing to pay everything, even if it breaks their bank!

“What the heck! And they’d actually agreed to this amount of pay?”

Young Master Gold was almost choking at his rage. He could not fathom what was on these female bodyguards’ minds, were they missing some brain cells? How could they have agreed to such a low pay, were they not self-derogating?

“Hmmm, Young Master, I think it’s good news. The lower their pay, the easier for us to persuade them to join us. Also, we’ll spend less money too, given that the starting pay is so low!”

A bodyguard of the Gold family addressed with a huge grin on his face, wanting to please his young master.

“You got a point!”

Young Master Gold nodded at his words. He and his bodyguards were standing far away from the villa, paying attention to the situation inside the villa’s gate and waiting for the golden opportunity.

After like a century, finally, there were two shadows. Orchid and another lovely bodyguard showed up at the main gate of the villa. They seemed like they were preparing to go shopping.

“Finally, the opportunity is here!”

Kelly smiled slightly at the sight before him, and soon he ordered a few of the bodyguards to tail the two beauties together with him.

Not long after Orchid and the other cute bodyguard left the villa, they sensed somebody was behind them. Both halted and wheeled back immediately.

“Oh, it’s Young Master Gold. are you upset about what happened yesterday, that none of you managed to defeat us? And you brought all these men with you to create trouble this early? Trying to use the number to press against us, to kill us?”

Orchid sneered with a frosty cold tone when she realized the sickos that were tailing them were Young Master Gold and his bodyguards.

“Chill! It’s a misunderstanding!”

Kelly let out an awkward chortle and approached nearer to the two, and explained, “Oh, my two beautiful ladies, you’ve really misunderstood me. How could I let someone tail you and harm you? Look, both of you are skilled fighters with high vigilance. Hence, even if I wanted to do sneak attacks, it’s impossible to succeed! It’s dumb for me to do that!”

“Hmph! Good to know that you’ve used your brain!”

With Orchid’s arms crossed in front of her chest, she jeered with a stoic tone.

“My ladies, we’re actually looking for you to discuss some business with you.”

Kelly explained with a pretentious smile plastered on his face.

“Some business? What do you want?”

Orchid and the other female bodyguard exchanged glances, both looking perplexed at the statement.

“Yup! I noticed this iron fact yesterday, that all nine of you, wait, no, there’s another beauty. All ten of you are strong combatants and your fighting prowess are incomparable! It’s really rare to have ten lovely masters of fighting... How wonderful!”

Kelly said it with a broad mischievous grin on his face, as though he was a greedy moneylender.

An obvious irritation washed over Orchid’s face, she barked impatiently. “Stop talking bullsh*t! If you have something to say, just spit it out! Don’t tell me you came here all the way just to praise us!”

“What a clever girl! And yes, I came here for an important business. I got to know that your combined salary is only twenty thousand dollars per month, which is way too little for a skilled fighter like you!”

Young Master Gold put on a faint smile, and extended his left palm, showing a figure five, “Fifty thousand dollars! How about the Gold family pays you fifty thousand per month? Quit your job and work for us!”

“Young Master Gold, let’s forget what you’ve said just now. Fifty thousand? We’re not interested at all!”

Orchid rejected his proposal straightaway without showing any hint of hesitation.

“Yep! You want us to quit our job? Dream on!” The other beautiful bodyguard refused Kelly’s proposition as well, without thinking twice.

Chapter 703

The corners of Kelly's mouth twitched as though he was having a stroke. He started to wonder if he had misheard them. He had increased the pay from twenty thousand to fifty thousand, it was more than double! Why on earth did the ladies reject this fantastic raise without even thinking about it?

"Alright, alright. I'll pay one hundred thousand. One hundred thousand is pretty good now, right?"

Kelly tightened his teeth and stretched out another hand, spreading all fingers of both hands to gesture the figure 'ten'. "This price is five times your current salary. There's no reason for you to refuse!"

"Hell no!"

The two beauties looked at each other and yelled in unison. Once the last syllable of the word dropped, the two turned and walked away, not bothering to continue this boring conversation anymore.

"What the f*ck?"

Kelly and his bodyguards exchanged perplexing glances, each of them remained as still as a statue, as though the episode had not registered into their central brain. Did these women just reject one hundred thousand pay per month? Were they stupid or what?

"What the heck, I don't believe it!"

Kelly was not convinced, so he ran forward, caught up with the two, and then offered again. "Two hundred thousand dollars per month! How about that?"

Nonetheless, the two did not even bother to answer this time. They continued walking, nonchalantly.

“Three hundred thousand!

“Four hundred thousand!

“Five hundred thousand!”

Kelly kept increasing the amount as he followed the two by their side. The number was quickly raised to five hundred thousand per month. Each of the ten female bodyguards would be offered five hundred thousand a month, and it would be sixty million per year. The cost to hire these ten bodyguards was already hellishly high!

Nevertheless, Kelly was not convinced of the refusal, and he did not believe that these female bodyguards would reject such a high pay.

Finally, Orchid and another bodyguard stopped.

Kelly showed a victorious smile when the two had finally stopped for him. He thought that there was hope, and he said expectantly, “How’s it? Five hundred thousand a month and all ten of you will be offered the same amount. This number is considered high in the bodyguard’s market, isn’t it?”

“Young Master Gold, you won’t give up, will you? Even if you’ve offered us one million dollars, none of us will accept it, let alone five hundred thousand.”

Orchid flashed him a mirthless smile, spilling out a statement that would break Kelly’s hope and stop him from dreaming.

“What the f*ck?”

Kelly’s jaw dropped to the ground, and his eyes widened. “Why on earth did you reject such a great

offer? Are you nuts or idiots? That you actually refuse such a high salary! Are you a hardcore fan of Jack? Otherwise, why are you satisfied with only two thousand per month?"

"It's because Master Jack is Master Jack. We follow him simply because he's Master Jack, it's Master Jack's personal charm that makes us follow undoubtedly. It has nothing to do with money. So now, can you f*ck off?"

Orchid smiled faintly, and she left with the other bodyguard in the next second.

Kelly and his bodyguards, on the other hand, stood still on the same spot, completely stunned.

After a moment that felt like a century, Kelly only moved a little—he turned his head toward his bodyguards—and asked in a disbelieving tone, "Master Jack's personal charm? Did I hear it wrong?"

"No, you didn't. Do you think that it's because Jack is good-looking? Or it's the inner kindness that makes up his personal charm?"

One of the bodyguards managed to spew some thoughts after squeezing all his brain juice. He looked at Kelly with confusion written on his face.

"I know! It must be that Jack has some sort of underground romantic relationships with these women a long time ago!"

Another bodyguard blurted out of a sudden as though some truth had entered his tiny brain. He guessed boldly, "Just try to think about it, women, in nature, are fans of love and romance. Usually, they would be blinded and dazzled by love and thus make such irrational decisions. They're emotional mammals that can't think logically. Otherwise, how could they pick two thousand over five hundred thousand? It's a stupid choice! This proves the secret romance between Jack and these women! They would rather take two thousand than to leave Jack!"

"Jesus f*cking Christ! It totally makes sense! Damn, Jack, this brat is something. All those ten beauties are his collection! Sh*t! This brat is just too good at flirting and seducing, isn't he?"

Kelly nodded, his facial expression was full of admiration and envy. How he desired he was Jack right now.

Chapter 704

In the end, Kelly had no other option but to return to Gold's residence, with his gloomy face.

The head of the Gold family frowned when Kelly appeared in his sight. He then asked, "What's the matter? You look upset!"

"I went to Jack's villa to persuade those bodyguards to leave Jack and come work with us. But everything is in vain!"

Kelly explained, smiling bitterly.

"Are you sure? How much do they earn per month now?"

Ezra—the head of the Gold family—was slightly startled. The thought of an unsuccessful persuasion had never crossed his mind. Was it because Jack paid them incredibly high?

"Only two thousand per month!"

A wry smile on Kelly's face as he responded.

"Two thousand? Are you freaking kidding me? They only earn two thousand a month, and you couldn't even get them to leave Jack? It should be a piece of cake!"

Ezra's facial expression morphed into one of unpleasant surprise, his eyes were as large as saucers.

"Father, they claimed proudly that they followed Jack because of his personal charm, and even if I've offered them half a million or even five million a month, they won't budge in slightest!"

Kelly added further, his smile bitter. "Ha! Personal charm, can you believe that?"

Ezra's mouth was immediately shut for a few seconds at Kelly's claim. "Personal charm? What bullsh*t reason is that? I think they probably have some romantic affair with Jack. Otherwise, how can they reject money? Which type of woman on earth doesn't like money and branded bags? What a joke!"

"Yeah, that's what I thought too. But the real reason is not important anymore, it's impossible to persuade these women to work for us!"

Kelly heaved a deep sigh of defeat. It was obvious that he tried to suppress the disappointment within him.

After all, if he were accompanied by such a group of pleasing and lovely bodyguards, every existing man on the earth would look at him differently—admiration and approbation.

...

At noon, Jack, Fiona, and the others headed to a high-class restaurant in an opulent hotel, with a team of bodyguards together with them.

"Master Jack, are you serious about treating us to lunch? You're so generous!"

Orchid could not conceal her smiles, obviously elated.

“Of course! You helped me to give the Gold family an unforgettable lesson! And did you notice how snobbish and brazen he was before the duel? And how his expressions turned into one of those ugliest and gloomiest ones, ones that I’ve not been seeing in quite some time! I’m delighted!”

Jack replied and a warm chuckle let out from his mouth.

“Ugh! I’m so frustrated! I’m at big loss! Last night was a priceless opportunity for me to showcase my combat skill, and yet I was not there!” Elaine, on the other hand, whined like a dog, then she shot Ben—who was sitting beside—a cold stare. “It’s all your fault! If I weren’t needed to protect you, I could’ve had a good fight last night! Ughh!”

Ben flashed her a bitter smile in return. “Well, I didn’t ask you to protect me. You worry about me and you’re the one who insisted on following me!”

“Hmph! If it weren’t for Master Jack, that he worried about your well being and asked me to protect you, I didn’t even want to be near to you! And I still have to endure your vicious and venomous mouth every day when my job is only to protect you! Elaine sneered angrily.

“Alright, alright. Don’t be mad. C’mon, I’ll pour you a drink. Thank you for being the most responsible bodyguard and for protecting me every day! Is that good now?”

Ben signed in defeat. He opened a red wine and poured a glass for Elaine.

“Hmph! At least you know how to say thank you!” Elaine snorted coldly, a closed-lip smile formed at the corners of her mouth, a frosty one.

Chapter 705

“Ahem! Jack, since it’s a rare opportunity to gather everyone for lunch, today the bill is on me!” All of sudden, Fiona blurted, followed by a giggly laugh.

Jack and Selena instantly looked at each other, their eyes full of disbelief. The thought of Fiona being generous and treating everyone to lunch with her own money had never crossed their minds.

“Mother, are you sure? I’ll pay for it, alright? Don’t worry about it!”

A pretentious modesty appeared on Jack’s face, he smiled and offered to pay.

“I’m just so happy today. Besides, I’m loaded now, no longer the old Fiona—poor and impecunious. It’s only lunch, I’ll pay for it!”

Fiona chortled in return, her mood obviously high and good.

“Tsk tsk, it’s not easy for a person to change, Ma. You used to be such a stingy person. You wouldn’t pay even if someone gave you money. I never imagined that you would suddenly have the conscience to do so now!” Ben said, grinning.

“What are you talking about? What do you mean I was stingy? We were poor before. I was being frugal, got it? Someone like me is more suited to manage money!”

Fiona rolled her eyes at Ben. “Eat all you want, everyone,” she told the entire family. “Just order more wine if you think it’s not enough. The bill can come up to ten thousand, a hundred thousand—it doesn’t matter!”

“Hear that? Did you hear that? My mom just said that. Let’s eat. Don’t be shy!”

Ben said with a huge grin.

...

At that moment, a middle-aged man was seen in front of the Green Sky Hall's entrance. He brought quite a few people and went straight in.

The head of Green Sky Hall, Hector, immediately frowned when he saw the middle-aged man leading the group. He then went forward to welcome them with a smile. "Oh my. What's going on? The head of the Eagle Clan is gracing my hall today. I did have a feeling that an esteemed guest was coming to visit today, but never did I imagine that it would be you, Master Neuman!"

Lee Neuman, the head of the Eagle Clan gave a wan smile. "Master Zaborowski, I have a matter to discuss with you today," he said. "Let's talk inside. It's not convenient out here with so many people around!"

"Oh. Alright then!"

Hector nodded his head, smiling. He only brought a few of his most trusted fighters and they headed back in, along with the leader of the Eagle Clan. "Master Neuman, you're being too courteous. Just call me Mr. Zaborowski. That's what my men call me. It feels strange if you call me 'master'."

"It doesn't matter if I call you Master Zaborowski or Mr. Zaborowski. It doesn't change the fact that you call the shots here!"

Lee burst into laughter. The group quickly filtered into a receiving hall and settled themselves on the seats.

"Alright, Master Neuman. There are no outsiders here. You can say whatever you want to say now. The last time we saw each other must have been two years ago. You wouldn't come to see me if nothing was going on!"

Hector was still smiling. He looked warm and friendly on the surface.

Lee's countenance shifted, turning heavier. He looked straight at Hector. "Not too long ago, 300 men from the Eagle Clan died," he said. "They were killed in the forest outside the city. One of them was part of my cadre—Baldy! Have you heard of this incident, Master Zaborowski?"

Hector picked up his teacup and slowly took a sip from it. Then he nodded his head. "Of course, I've heard of it. I even heard that it was a lone murderer. Tsk tsk. A man with such strength is frightening indeed. He must at least be a marshal!"

Lee shook his head. "I think even a marshal doesn't possess that kind of strength. Among the 300 men, quite a number were masters within the Eagle Clan. You know as well as I do that the Eagle Clan is among the best of all the Halls. Now among the Four Fighters, only three are left. If my guess is correct, it's highly improbable that the murderer is a marshal. Rather, it's highly likely that he's a King of War!"

"A King of War?"

Hector drew his brows together when he heard the phrase 'King of War'. "It'd be a huge problem if you provoke a King of War." No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 706-710

Chapter 706

"Judging from the strength needed to kill that many men, it's almost certain that he's a King of War. And we've been deciphering his modus operandi over and over, and all our men died by a clean break to the neck. It's definitely done by a single person. Doesn't seem like anyone else helped!"

Lee's expression darkened. "Because of this, we suffered heavy losses and our position dropped a lot. Two of our territories had been snatched away by other Halls!"

When Hector heard this, his features twisted into an unreadable expression. "Master Neuman, don't tell

me you want to get my help to take your territories back? They probably aren't worth much if they're just small areas, right? Besides, this is a matter of the Eagle Clan. What does it have to do with Green Sky Hall?"

Lee laughed aloud. "We won't trouble you for this. I've managed to recruit quite a few fighters lately. One of them is even stronger than Baldy when he first started out. That's why we've already managed to take our small territories back!"

"Then you just came over to complain to me?"

Hector frowned. He did not think that Lee would come over for something as menial as that.

"We've been trying to find the murderer of Baldy and the others for some time now. Finally, we've got our man. It's a 99% guarantee that it's that person!"

Anger sparked in Lee's eyes as he spoke. That man had killed 300 of their men, including a top fighter. This thought sent his mind into panic every time.

"Tell me then. Eastfield only has a handful of Kings of War. It should be easy enough to weed him out if you investigate properly."

Hector spoke slowly after he thought about it, "But let's say that he's a high-ranking King of War and that he earned his position through his fists. It would be difficult for you to get revenge then!"

"You've seen him before!" Lee revealed, smiling bitterly.

"I've seen him before?"

Hector frowned. "No way. I've not spoken to any marshals or Kings of War lately," he said, surprised.

“And they think of themselves as the protectors of Daxia. They’re righteous warriors. We would have nothing common to talk about in a conversation!”

“Mhmm. He came to see you just two days ago. If my guess isn’t wrong, he even fought with your men!” Lee answered, giving a wan smile.

“Jack White!” Hector and the fighters around him immediately cried out.

“That’s right. It’s the adopted son-in-law of the Taylor family!”

Lee spoke in a confident tone, “I conducted a little investigation and found out that my subordinate had offended a good buddy of his, named Tiger. Tiger is a delivery boy, someone unassuming. But he actually killed 300 of my men to avenge his friend!”

Here, Lee paused for a while before continuing leisurely, “And according to what I know, your men had also offended Tiger and his wife a while ago. And so that punk came looking for you! I believe that he fought with your people!”

The corners of Hector’s mouth twitched slightly. It took a while before he replied in a frank tone, “That punk didn’t come to us just because of that. There was something else as well!”

Chapter 707

“Oh, really? Why don’t you tell me about it?”

Lee was slightly taken aback. He never thought that Jack would meet the Green Sky Hall for anything else other than the whole outcry over what they had done to Tiger.

At this moment, the master of the Green Sky Hall took a step forward. “This is what happened. Our men are also involved in another business,” he explained. “We don’t just make business within the country,

but we trade with a foreign organization as well. We secretly take pictures of women and sell them..."

After Lee heard the entire story, he spoke up in a huff, "Jack really went overboard. This has nothing to do with him. It's natural for him to ask for compensation from you because of what happened to Tiger, but you guys didn't even take pictures of his wife. Why did he have to get so worked up about it!"

"Right? This incident really pissed me off too!"

Hector's expression hardened, then his gaze sidled toward Lee. This entire affair was between him and Jack. He was curious why Lee was reacting in such a manner, blowing up even more than he did.

"Then what happened? Did you guys fight him after he came?"

Lee asked after he thought about it.

"Of course, we fought. Initially, we had planned to kill him if he wasn't any good. But if he was strong, we would brush the conflict off as a misunderstanding..."

Hector narrated the entire incident to Lee. After he finished his story, he released a long sigh. "Unfortunately, we lost! All our people were no match for him."

After he said that, Hector looked as though he suddenly recalled something, and could not help but say to Lee, "Right, Master Neuman, isn't Jack, a commander? I heard that he proclaimed to have two hundred million dollars to his name during Old Man Taylor's seventieth birthday party. He's probably a commander. But he claimed that he lost his medal. Why are you saying that he's a King of War?"

"It's obvious that this punk is lying. He's definitely not some run-of-the-mill assistant commander!" Lee chuckled. "I'm very sure that the person who killed Baldy and the rest of our 300 men was Jack. And with that amount of destructive power, he's definitely a King of War. There's no way that so many people would surround him together and still be killed otherwise."

“His strength really can’t be underestimated. Judging from how our best fighters fared against him, he doesn’t seem like a commander. Even a marshal wouldn’t have beaten us so easily!”

After Hector began to deduce the information, a shadow passed over his features. If this was truly the case, he would truly be difficult to deal with.

“Master Zaborowski, that punk told you to cut off the entire photo trade. Do you really want to give it up just like that? You guys make a lot of money from it every month. More importantly, this is a business that will only expand into a gold mine, and you’ll just abandon it? Can you really do that?”

Lee noticed that Hector was in a dour mood, and he intensified his manipulation. “Why don’t our Halls join hands and kill this nuisance?”

At this moment, Hector burst into laughter instead. “Master Neuman, you’ve spoken so much today, but this is your main motive of coming here, isn’t it? You don’t stand a chance against him, so you’re coming to us in hopes that we’ll lend you our strength!”

Lee nodded his head. “That’s right. I was thinking of that when I came here. That punk offended both of our Halls. How can we just let him live?”

Hector went silent, pondering. After a while, he finally replied, “For now, we’re not sure if we want to take Jack on. You said it yourself. It’s a big possibility that he has the strength of a King of War. It won’t be easy to kill him. And in the end, we might suffer heavy losses and still end up on the losing side!”

Chapter 708

“Can you really stand it, Hector? This is a colossal loss for you! Have you really thought about it? At any rate, I’ve got some grudges against the kid!”

Lee chuckled, although he was a little unhappy. He had thought that the master of the Green Sky Hall

would agree to cooperate with him. After all, Jack had bullied him practically to death.

He never expected that Hector would choose to compromise himself at this moment.

“Master Neuman, what happened to the Green Sky Hall is a little different from what happened to yours. The Eagle Clan lost 300 men. They were your precious comrades, so I understand if you want to kill Jack!”

Hector released a breath. He picked up his cup from the table and sipped from it. “However, no one from our side has died,” he said slowly, “only two of our men were critically injured. One had his leg broken, and the other had his d*ck rendered useless. So we didn’t lose any men, and we’ve only lost a bit of money. There’s no need for us to provoke a man who has the strength of a King of War. Look, let’s say we fight—we’ll still suffer heavy losses even if we win!”

The corners of Lee’s lips began to twitch. Green Sky Hall was very powerful, and they had the backing of Kingston Hall. That was why he wanted to cooperate with them and gather their strongest fighters to assassinate Jack together.

Now though, if Green Sky Hall refused his proposal, he would have zero chance against Jack, with only the men from the Eagle Clan to rely on.

He never expected that Hector would cast him a long look and suddenly break into a smile. “Oh, right. I heard that Jack had offended Young Master Wilson during Old Man Taylor’s seventieth birthday party not too long ago,” he said. “The Wilsons are very powerful too. That guy really has got some guts!”

Lee was not an idiot. When he heard this, he immediately understood the hidden message behind Hector’s words. His eyes brightened as he leaped to his feet. “Master Zaborowski, think about my proposal for a while longer. Once you have truly come to your senses, just give me a call. We’ll stand together, for the enemy of an enemy is a friend. I believe that there’ll be a day where we’ll be allies!”

“Let’s wait and see. For now, though, I really don’t want to provoke someone who’s as strong as a King

of War!”

Hector chuckled and climbed onto his feet as well, preparing to see his guest off.

Soon enough, Lee and the others left Green Sky Hall.

After the men from the Eagle Clan left, the old woman of Green Sky Hall finally blurted toward Hector, “Master, Jack is truly a loathsome man. He’s making us lose at least one million dollars in a single month. If we can’t continue our business, I think we should cooperate with the Eagle Clan and get rid of Jack!”

Yet Hector had a frosty smile plastered onto his face. “Lee will definitely never forgive Jack for killing 300 of the Eagle Clan’s men,” he said. “I reminded him of something else just now though. I believe that he’ll go see the Wilsons and make an alliance with them. They’ll help us get rid of Jack instead. Isn’t that better? We won’t have to do anything. All we have to do is to sit back and enjoy the show. Isn’t this perfect?”

The old woman’s eyes brightened when she heard this. She flashed him a thumbs up. “It’s perfect. It’s absolutely perfect! We’ll reap the rewards for no cost if they’re really able to get rid of Jack.”

“Mmhmm. Let’s just wait and see. We need to continue our photograph business. We can’t just give up a gold mine because Jack threatened us.”

Hector thought about it for a while and added, “But tell our men to be more careful. Don’t let Jack catch them doing our business anymore. It would be troublesome for us if he did. We’ll just be as careful as we can. As for Jack, we’ll let Lee and the others take care of him. We’ll just quietly rake in the dough.”

The few people surrounding him bobbed their heads.

...

At this moment, Lee and his henchmen quickly arrived on the streets.

“Master, are we going to the Wilson family’s estate?”

One of the elders had already guessed Lee’s motives. He could not help but step forward and ask.

After Lee thought about it, he nodded. “We should pay the Wilsons a visit. But the fighters from the Wilsons are no match for those from Green Sky Hall. Furthermore, Green Sky Hall has Kingston Hall backing them up. There’s no way that Kingston Hall will stand by and watch if anything happens to Green Sky Hall. That’s why the Wilson family isn’t as reliable!”

Chapter 709

“Why are we still meeting them then, if they’re not that reliable and can’t guarantee us victory?”

The elder furrowed his brows and asked again.

Lee gave a bitter smile. “Wouldn’t it be better if we made an ally with the Wilson family while we’re forming an alliance with Green Sky Hall? Firstly, let’s go meet the Wilson family and propose an alliance. But don’t rush it. We’ll plan our next move once we have Green Sky Hall in the alliance!”

“But won’t it be difficult to get Green Sky Hall onboard? Hector already expressed that he didn’t want to face Jack with us just now!”

A middle-aged woman chimed in, frowning, “Unless you have some other plan in mind, Master?”

“Of course, I have a plan!”

Lee burst into guffaws. "It's impossible that Hector doesn't hate Jack. He just wants to watch from the side-lines because he fears that we are no match for Jack. He even reminded us of the Wilson family on purpose, hoping that we will cooperate with them and get rid of Jack. As for them, they won't have to lift a finger, and their enemy would be gone. Hmph. Did he really think I wouldn't see through his schemes?"

The middle-aged woman clenched her hands into fists when she heard that. "Hmph. What an old fox. He meant to use us as fodder!"

The elder asked, "Then how should we drag Green Sky Hall into this, Master? It'll be very difficult for us if they refuse to join us!"

"Didn't they say that they wouldn't sell photos to the foreign organization anymore? I don't believe a word of it!"

Lee chuckled and said, "We'll get a few of our bravest men to pretend to be from Green Sky Hall and go around secretly taking pictures. Then we'll get Jack to find out and pin the blame onto Green Sky Hall."

"Amazing. Your plan is absolutely amazing, Master. It'd be difficult for them to refuse to join our alliance then!"

A few of the fighters surrounding him nodded their heads. They could not help but admire their master's intelligence.

"Let's go and see the Wilson family!"

Lee waved his hand. He and his men drove straight toward the Wilson family's estate.

...

“F*ck. That stupid Jack. My face still hasn’t recovered!”

A few days had passed since the party incident. Michael rubbed his face. It still felt a little swollen.

However, the injuries were barely noticeable from a glance. He would probably recover fully in one or two days.

“Dad, you must avenge me!”

Michael looked at his father, almost bursting into tears.

“Of course!”

David looked at his son, expression solemn. “Don’t worry. I’ve spent quite a lot of money lately to hire a few fighters to be our bodyguards,” he said, “I even recruited some from other cities. They’re all pretty strong. Jack won’t live for very long.”

Chapter 710

“That—that’s great!”

Michael heaved an internal sigh of relief when he heard that.

“Master, the Eagle Clan is here to pay you a visit!”

Right at this moment, a bodyguard ran in and reported, “The master of the Eagle Clan is here, along with his fighters!”

David and Michael exchanged a glance. They were confused.

“F*ck. What does the Eagle Clan want from us? Organizations that operate in the day like us have never had anything to do with Halls like theirs!”

David frowned. The Eagle Clan could not be easily provoked. They were far stronger than a second-class aristocratic family like his. Their sudden appearance at his doorstep made him anxious.

“Dad, don’t tell me that one of our men offended the Eagle Clan so they’re here to see us now? It’ll be troublesome if that happens. It won’t be easy to deal with them!”

Michael was worried as well.

David looked at the bodyguard. “Tell me, were they extremely angry when they arrived?” he asked.

The bodyguard shook his head. “No. They were all very calm. They said that they’re here to propose a deal to you!”

“Alright. Bring them in!” David loosened a breath when he heard that. Then he waved his hand.

“Looks like they’re not here for trouble!” David told his son after the bodyguard left.

After a while, Lee and the others came in.

Lee raised his hands in a fist-to-palm salute toward David after he sat down. “Master Wilson, long time no see. I heard that the Wilson family has been doing well lately. So admirable!”

David managed a wan smile and returned the salute. "Oh, we're not that great. We're just getting by. We have no way to match up to a first-class aristocratic family!"

"From the looks of it, your family is drawing closer and closer to the title of a first-class aristocratic family!"

Lee flashed a polite smile and looked at Michael. "Young—Young Master Wilson, your face hasn't recovered completely yet? Tsk. What a shame. I heard that Ivan from the Taylor family was the one who beat you up?"

When he heard this, Michael replied immediately in a huff. "It was Ivan's doing, but the person I'm most frustrated at is that son-in-law of the Taylor family. My face wouldn't be in this state if he didn't think of that method to punish me. I'm mad at Ivan, but I'm most angry at Jack..."

Here, Michael ground his jaw and clenched his fists. "If I ever get the chance, I'll make sure that Jack is flayed and tortured to death!"

"All right. That's the spirit!"

Lee instantly stood up as he saw Michael's temper flaring. He clapped his hands as he spoke, "You're a true man, Young Master Wilson. You have the aura of someone who isn't afraid of anything. Men should be like that. To bless when they have received blessings, and to take revenge when they have been wronged!"

Delight sprang in Michael's heart at the other man's praise. "But of course, don't judge me just because I'm fat. I'm a grown man as well!" he said, chuckling.

Yet David, who was watching all this from the side, could not bear to watch on any longer. "Master Neuman, just get straight to the point," he said simply, tone blunt. "The Wilson family hardly associates with your Eagle Clan on a normal basis. What business are you here for today?" No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 711-715

Chapter 711

When Lee noticed that David was raising the issue, he said, "To be honest, you know as well as I do that the Eagle Clan has suffered heavy losses before this. We lost 300 men, and we've been searching for the culprit behind their murders. We must avenge their deaths by killing him!"

"Oh? So did you find him?"

David's heart nearly skipped a beat. He said, "Master Neuman, why are you here then? Don't tell me that you suspect one of us? Your 300 men were all elites from the headquarters. One of them was even one of the Four Fighters from the Eagle Clan. We certainly don't have the means to have a man slaughter so many people!"

"It's all a misunderstanding! You misunderstood me, Master Wilson," Lee replied hurriedly. "I don't want to cause any trouble by coming to you. I wanted to cooperate with you!"

Here, Lee paused for a while and cast a glance toward Michael, who stood to the side. "According to our investigations, Jack was the one who killed our 300 men," he continued. "That son-in-law of the Taylor family, Jack!"

"What!"

Michael immediately exclaimed when he heard that. His expression revealed utter disbelief. "No way. Is he that strong?"

"You don't know who he really is?"

Lee was surprised. "I know that you're on pretty good terms with Selena. Shouldn't you have some

knowledge about the circumstances surrounding Jack White?”

“Not really. I’ve seen him fight before, but he was only facing off against a few dozen bodyguards. I know that he’s pretty strong, but no way that he killed all 300 of your men all by himself!”

Michael still felt that it was impossible. He looked straight at Lee. “Maybe you’ve got the wrong guy? The man who killed your people from the Eagle Clan, at least had the strength of a marshal or a King of War. And Jack is probably just a head commander!”

“No way. We’ve verified our sources. It’s definitely him!”

Lee was extremely adamant. “Jack is a funny little character. I suspected that he was a King of War who was hiding his true strength and keeping a low profile. But once he’s provoked, the consequences are unimaginable.”

At this moment, David nodded his head after he thought about the subject. “Jack is very strong. I was also curious why so many people respect him even though he was just an assistant commander. And many war veterans had turned up for Old Man Taylor’s birthday party!”

“Dad, if Jack truly turns out to be a King of War, it doesn’t matter if he’s only a one-star King of War—he’ll be extremely difficult to beat! What do we do? Don’t tell me that I have no hope of taking revenge?”

Michael twisted his features into a grimace, clearly unhappy with the news.

“Don’t worry. The Wilsons cannot beat him alone. But we have our brothers from the Eagle Clan with us. Isn’t that right?”

David chuckled. “Master Neuman said it himself just now, that he came over to negotiate an agreement between us. You won’t let him go just like that, won’t you, knowing that he murdered your men?”

“Bingo!”

Lee gave a wan smile. “Just get some of your best men ready and wait for our orders. We’ll get in contact then and set out to kill Jack. We’ll arrange everything else!”

“But I don’t feel assured even if we combine the forces from our two families. In fact, I feel like we’ll suffer many casualties! If we lose too many of our men, our position and power will drop significantly!”

David felt unsure of the plan after he thought about it for a while.

“Don’t worry about it, Master Wilson. Jack is a certified ass*hole. He even offended the Green Sky Hall. Soon enough, we’ll have the Green Sky Hall by our side as well!”

Lee flashed a mysterious smile and said, “But you’ll have to wait patiently for our arrangements!”

“No problem. It’s a done deal then!”

David extended his hand. The two men shook hands, faces beaming triumphantly.

Chapter 712

At that moment, Jack and the others had just finished their lunch at the hotel. They were about to go back after a scrumptious meal.

“It wasn’t that expensive now, was it? We only spent over seven hundred thousand dollars. I thought the bill would go over a million!”

Fiona was rich now. When she spoke, there was an undeniable tinge of arrogance laced in her words.

“Ma, you really... Did you forget our struggling days in poverty?”

Selena gave a bitter smile. She did not know whether to laugh or cry.

“Ah, why would I compare myself to the olden days? Now I have a son-in-law who can bring in the dough, and my daughter makes plenty of money as well. Of course, I should indulge myself. Money is meant to be spent!”

Fiona grinned and looked at Joan beside her. “Let’s go, Joan dear. I saw some nice clothes in a boutique yesterday. I think it’d suit you. Why don’t we go shopping?”

“Is it expensive?”

Joan frowned. She remembered how Jack had brought her to buy plenty of clothing and all sorts of unnecessary things the last time. Even now, she was still not used to it.

Besides, Jack gave her quite a lot of money. Now that it was in her grasp, she could not bear to spend it every time she flashed back to her days as a cleaner.

“It’s not that expensive. Just a little more than ten thousand dollars. More importantly, it will look good on you. I’m a little short, so I probably won’t look good in it. Why would I recommend the clothes to you otherwise?”

Fiona chuckled as she spoke. Jack had given her ninety million dollars yesterday. She was in good spirits now, and she was even feeling amicable toward her son-in-law.

“Alright then!”

Joan smiled and agreed to the proposal to go shopping.

Of course, two of the beautiful bodyguards tailed after them to ensure their safety.

“Let’s go, Ben. We’ll take a look at your cybercafe and see how it is doing now!”

Andrew drank quite a bit during lunchtime, and now his cheeks were flushed. He patted his son’s shoulder and they left. Naturally, a few bodyguards followed them as well.

“Let’s go, dear. We’ll take Kylie to the aquarium. I did promise her, after all!”

Jack looked at the beautiful Selena beside him, smiling as he spoke.

“Alright! Kylie had been wanting to go for a long time now. But I didn’t have the time nor the money, so I told her that we would go together once Daddy is back.

“That’s why Kylie always hoped that you would return soon so that you could bring her there!”

Selena’s eyes began to redden as she reminisced about what had happened these past few years.

At that time, she had been extremely afraid that Jack would never return. She had been fearful that he would die on the battlefield.

Kylie would not have a father then, and she would officially be an orphan.

Fortunately, the gods were smiling upon them, and Jack returned. He did not disappoint her either,

turning out to be a strong and reliable man.

“Don’t worry. I’m back now. All we need to do is live our lives peacefully. We’ll definitely be happy together!”

Jack was touched. He swept Kylie into his arms and walked forward.

Orchid and three other female bodyguards trailed after them, keeping an eye out for danger.

In a car not too far away from them, Flynn was watching the entire exchange furiously.

“It’s time to make a move, Cousin. Jack has been poisoned for a few days now. He’s definitely not in his best form to fight!”

Chapter 713

Flynn spoke with such hatred, and he gritted his teeth in fury and bitterness.

“Don’t wear yourself out over this. The people I’ve dispatched are ready to give Jack a good beating without killing him. We still need to wait for him to make a fool of himself and die painfully during Selena’s birthday party.” With a cynical grin on his face, Ken then took out his phone to make a call.

Not a second later, more than a dozen people walked out from an alley, seemingly dubious and shady-looking.

Flynn frowned as he looked at the people slowly emerging from the alley. “Are these people reliable, Ken?”

“Don’t worry. I was afraid of exposing myself so I employed gangsters, but there are several strong ones

among them, and they're definitely reliable!" Ken said confidently. "Of course, they're no match to a not-poisoned Jack, but as luck would have it, he's weakening due to the poison as we speak. It's been days now, and he definitely seems to be unaware. Rest assured: these people could give him a good one-two."

Still, Flynn was considerably worried—and rather surprised—when he saw four stunning ladies with Jack. "Look at him. He has four women with him, and the words 'Taylor family's bodyguard' are written on their clothes... I wonder what these four women are like."

"We never heard of Jack employing bodyguards. F*ck!" Ken cursed the wind. "Now that Xena isn't with them, we won't get updates about them in real-time."

Once he gave the women a once-over, Ken then surmised, "It should be fine. Look at those four women. Do they look like bodyguards? All of them have long legs, fair skin and pretty faces. Well, there's no reason to fret. They're no match for a gang this many in number, and that's for sure!"

Flynn nodded, agreeing to Ken. "Jack is really good at employing bodyguards, I'll give him that. All of them are so pretty. I don't think he's employing bodyguards... I think he's getting his hands on women!"

"My thoughts exactly," snapped Ken. "This womanizer! Selena loves him so much, but he might've had secret affairs with these women since long ago. That irks me so much! And here I am, holding Selena so dear to me and treats her so well. I don't even mind that she's married and has a child. How dare she ignore me! This is so frustrating!"

...

Orchid's keen eyes noted the group of people walking toward them from afar, and she saw the unmistakable look of malice in their eyes. "Master, see those people there? They seem to be coming our way!"

"There are only a dozen people, so I'll leave them to you guys." With his child, Kylie in his arms, he

gently spoke, “Kylie, turn your head away, don’t look forward now. You might be frightened of what’ll happen next. It might get brutal.”

The last thing Jack expected was for Kylie’s defiant, “No!” She then pouted. “I want to see how the pretty sisters fight the bad guys. I want to beat bad guys up when I’m older, too! I’ll beat anyone who bullies Mommy and Daddy!”

“This girl...” At a loss of words for a good while, he felt a warm sensation going through the fibers of his being. “Alright. Since you’re brave enough, you can look.”

Turning to his bodyguards, Jack then ordered, “If they make a move, you fight back, but don’t kill anybody so you don’t scare Kylie. Just give them a beating they’ll never forget!”

“Yes, Master!” Orchid and the group nodded.

The gangsters acted nonchalant—somewhat unsuspecting—as they came closer, but they instantaneously reacted once they came close enough to Jack and his company.

“Beat them!” yelled one of the people with dyed-blond hair, and everyone else rushed toward Jack not a moment later.

All four beautiful female bodyguards encompassed Jack and his family defensively. They attacked at the same time.

In just a blink of an eye, the gangsters dropped like flies as they moaned and writhed in pain.

Chapter 714

“How’s that possible? There are a dozen of them! Hasn’t it only been a few seconds? Every single one has fallen!” Ken’s jaws nearly dropped to the ground when he saw the turn of events, at how the

gangsters were defeated so fast.

“Didn’t you say that the people you employed were reliable, Ken? Look: We failed to even test that guy’s true power. He hadn’t even done anything, and all our people had already fallen!” The expression Flynn was wearing was equatable to unadulterated fury as his chest heaved.

“This is an accident, Flynn. This is definitely an accident! I never thought these girls would be so skilled!” Ken smiled sheepishly. He could only watch as Jack swiftly walked away and left in their car.

“These female bodyguards aren’t weak!” said Flynn after he composed himself from his thoughts. “Since you’re afraid that Jack would recognize the bodyguards you normally have with you, my only remaining choice is to call and get the masters from the Young family.”

Ken nodded after he thought about it. “Agreed. Make the call, and make sure you get several good ones. However, it’s best if you don’t tell your parents about what happened to your leg for the time being. I’m afraid that they’ll be so angry that they’ll go after Jack the moment they knew what had actually happened. If that happens, we won’t be able to see Jack dying painfully during Selena’s birthday party!”

Flynn nodded and agreed to it. “Right. We can’t let this guy die so easily!”

...

“Jack, do you know who those people are? Why are they after us?” Although those people were no rivals of their bodyguards, Selena was still worried.

Their family was exposed for all eyes to see while the enemy hid behind shadows. It was difficult to hide from these people if they were constantly ambushed!

Behind the wheels, Jack frowned. “I really don’t know about this. There’s a possibility that it’s Ivan. I did beat him up, after all. Michael must hate me too, so there’s that. Of course, it seems that it might be

Ken and Young Master Hugo. Apart from that, I also offended the so-called Green Sky Hall and ended their businesses that earned money. It could be them...”

Then, Jack’s eyes brightened as he exclaimed, “Oh, yes! Young Master Gold from the Gold family also lost something last night. If he’s narrow-minded, it might be him!”

Selena was speechless; it only occurred to her how many people Jack had offended without her knowing it. Guessing the perpetrator’s identity would be a difficult task indeed.

Mulling over her thoughts for a moment, a thought then stood out among the rest as she exclaimed, “Oh my god! Could it be that the Xenos family from the Sky City had come for us? Didn’t you say that the Xenos family is very powerful? I heard that they’re almost like the Drake family. We’re in so much trouble if it’s them”

Selena was even worried as she continued, frowning as she did, “This is really bad. How are you able to offend so many people? Dear me... What should we do? If it’s people from the Xenos family, then—”

Noting that his wife’s nerves were frazzled, Jack quickly assured her, “Honey, don’t worry. I can assure you that it’s not people from the Xenos family. They’re a strong family, so they would’ve come with a group of strong bodyguards. I’ve killed the master’s son, so isn’t it right that the patriarch comes forward?”

Jack then added, “Those people are just gangsters, and the Xenos people wouldn’t come with these people if they wanted revenge. Those gangsters seem to be from our Eastfield!”

Hearing her husband’s explanation, Selena relaxed as she petted her chest and muttered, “Oh, thank goodness... It’s best if it’s not the Xenos family. We’re lucky that all ten bodyguards that you’ve employed are quite good. I’d say that people with subpar skills won’t break a sweat for our bodyguards.”

“Yes! The pretty sisters are so strong! It’d be so good if I can be as good as them when I grow up!”

chirped Kylie as she giddily clapped with her delicate hands.

“Don’t worry! A child with clever and intelligent parents will grow up to be just like them. Kylie, you’ll be an extremely strong person when you grow up. If not, you’re not worthy of being my daughter!”

Chapter 715

Jack chuckled aloud right after that.

“What are you talking about?” Selena, who was beside him, lightly pinched at his thigh and rolled her eyes at him. “I don’t want my daughter to be a brawny girl when she grows up!”

“With how Kylie’s looking, she won’t be such a burly girl!” said Jack with a grin on his face. “However, we still need to teach her the skills she has to learn so she could protect herself. What’ll happen if she crosses paths with bad people and she can’t defend herself? Look at my daughter: She’ll be a stunner once she grows up!”

Selena nodded in agreement. “That’s right. After all, she’s my daughter!”

....

Not longer after, Jack brought his wife and daughter to the aquarium. They enjoyed a happy afternoon together and went home at around night time.

The following few days seemed normal.

However, 20 days to Selena’s birthday, something did happen. As he was driving home, he was stopped on the road.

Several people in black suits came down from the car in front of him, and they menacingly rubbed their knuckles as they came closer.

Jack got down from his car afterward.

“We’ll get him this time, Flynn. The people here this time are the stronger bodyguards from your family. It’s been ten days since Jack drank the poison, so this guy’s body must be extremely weak right now. I do wonder if he notices the condition of his body!” In a car not far away, Ken looked over where Jack was, and a small smile appeared on his face. “I must admit I feel giddy when I think of how we’ll hurt this guy later!”

Flynn seemed just as excited as he had been waiting for this day for a long time now. “That’s for sure. Two of the people I asked to come today are team leaders for our bodyguards. I think their fighting prowess can almost rival that of a major...”

Meanwhile...

“Who sent you guys?” Jack stood by the roadside and searched for a slightly spacious place. A group of seven to eight men had already surrounded him.

“You’re not qualified to know that, young man! We won’t tell you either!” One of the men smiled coldly as he twisted his head side to side, cracking his neck.

“Really? Well, let me tell you all something: You’re all out of luck because my daughter isn’t here today.” came Jack’s reply, nonchalant like the smile on his face.

“What does your daughter’s presence have to do with us? The order we received is to beat you up until you can’t move!” said the man opposite Jack before cackling aloud.

“If my daughter’s not here, the only option left for you is to die!” Jack smiled coldly. He stepped forward

and made the first attack.No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 716-720

Chapter 716

“You’re rather boastful, young man!” One of the bodyguards cackled sinisterly. He balled his fist and swung it, aiming for Jack when he saw him rushing toward them.

The fists from both men collided against each other, and the powerful force set off waves of gusts. Such a force sent the man flying.

The man vomited blood and was in disbelief; he never thought that the man before him could conjure such power. Jack’s energy exceeded his that it was the strength of a falling mountain.

The man fell to the ground as blood oozed out of his mouth. His face immediately turned extremely pale.

Jack took no breaks as he gave a sharp punch to another man’s neck. The unmistakable sound of something snapping could be heard, and the man fell lifelessly onto the floor.

A few more punches later, several masters died on the spot.

“I—Impossible!” The face of the man on the ground turned pale after seeing how the tides had turned. Every companion of his was a master, yet they were massacred so easily.

“Argh!” Another man—one with skills on par with a major—was also killed by Jack easily in just two seconds.

“You’re the last one. Do you believe me now?” Jack smirked sardonically at the man on the floor as he walked toward him.

Jack took out a cigarette and lit it up when he reached that person. He smoked for a short while before asking, "Speak up. Who sent you people?"

"I... I don't know!" The man gritted his teeth and was afraid. By instinct, the man turned to look at the BMW car parked not too far away on the opposite road.

Somewhat stunned, Jack followed this person's line of sight and looked over.

"F*ck! What's that fool looking over here for?!" Ken was immediately afraid when he saw the bodyguard looking over. He immediately started the car, stepped on the gas and left.

At this moment, both he and Flynn were downright petrified.

Those were the best fighters among all the bodyguards in the Young family. Among them, two were more-than-ordinary fighters. It never occurred to both Ken and Flynn that Jack could slay them so easily.

Jack laughed at the speed of the perpetrators leaving. "They left so fast! What cowards!"

With Jack's attention different, a flash of fierceness appeared in the eyes of the man lying on the ground. Pulling a dagger out, the man rushed toward Jack and aimed the dagger at Jack's abdomen.

Of course, Jack was much faster. With a flip of his hand, Jack caught his hand and stabbed the knife into the startled man's chest.

Chapter 717

When Jack loosened his hand, the man fell straight to the floor, his eyes still wide open in fright.

"Quite the bunch of suicidal people." Smirking callously, Jack went back to his car and swiftly left the

scene.

This time, he obviously had to show these people some consequences as it was difficult for him to live life in peace if they constantly interfered with his life.

...

Ken drove far away, still worried when he noted Jack was not trailing after them. He could only get a breather once they reached the Clark family mansion.

“Was I imagining things, Flynn? There are people with the fighting powers of majors among the masters from the Young family, yet Jack... Jack killed them so easily?!” Gulping nervously, Ken wiped the cold sweat on his forehead.

Flynn frowned and was quiet for some time before he spoke, “What’s going on? Why do I feel like that guy isn’t poisoned? Could Ivan and Xena have fooled us?”

Ken clenched his fists when he heard what Flynn had said. “F*ck. Now that you’ve mentioned it, I’m starting to wonder if we were played by that woman, Xena. If Jack was poisoned, he wouldn’t have been so powerful. More importantly, Jack has killed masters that were on par with majors of an army. Didn’t he say he’s a head commander in the army? Was he performing extraordinarily? That’s impossible!”

“This man is no commander, that’s for sure. He kept hiding his true strength, but I think he’s a marshal!” As he thought about it, Flynn then asserted, “It’s almost impossible for him to be a King of War. After all, there are very few people who are Kings of War, and they’re very well-known. I think he’s a marshal. There are quite a number of marshals, and it’s quite normal for him to not be well-known!”

“If Jack really is a marshal, why does this guy want to hide his identity?” wondered Ken.

“How would I know?!” Flynn was just as blank and clueless as to why Jack would hide his true strength

or identity.

A thought then occurred to him as his eyes lit up. "I get it! Some people might have the fighting strength of a marshal, and while he could've been a marshal, he might've made a mistake and was thus demoted!"

Ken nodded. "That makes sense. He might be lying when he said he lost his token and that he's just a normal soldier. He might've had a title but was demoted to a normal soldier after he made a mistake. He must've felt embarrassed if he mentioned this, or he might even get scolded by his wife or mother-in-law, thus he decided to better keep it a secret."

"Hmm... That must be it!" The more Flynn thought about it, the more possibilities were presented. He thought about it some more before he turned to Ken and said, "What should we do now then?"

Ken thought about it and said, "I'll go meet Ivan and Xena first. We're asking Young Master Hugo to join us too. We'll tell them about what happened today and see what they say. After all, we might be able to come up with a good plan when everyone's together."

Ken asked someone to carry Flynn back into the house before driving to the hospital with his subordinates. He also asked Young Master Hugo to come over as well.

"Why are the two of you here? I've recovered, and I'm getting ready to be discharged!" said a grinning Ivan as Ken and Neil approached him. "Did Xena tell you that I'm getting discharged? Are you guys picking me up so we can go celebrate over a meal?"

"I'm not sure. Young Master Clark called me and asked me here, saying that there's something important to discuss." Neil looked at Ken in doubt.

Ivan's grin fell at that moment as he had a bad feeling. "What is it? Did something happen?"

Ken looked at Xena meaningfully before he spoke to Ivan, "Let's go and find a place where we can all sit down. I'll explain to you guys while we're eating."

Xena frowned as she was uncomfortable at how Ken looked at her. It made her feel like she was a spy.

Chapter 718

Not long after, Ken brought the group to a hotel, had a private room and ordered some dishes.

Once they had finished ordering, Ken looked at Xena and asked, "Miss Xena, are you sure Jack drank the poison we gave you?"

Xena was startled at the question and looked somewhat uncertain before she replied, "Yes, I saw him drink it with my own eyes. I even passed him the mineral water myself. I saw him drink half a bottle in one go and threw the remaining into the dumpster."

"You didn't remember wrongly, no?" Ken asked again, still in doubt of what had actually gone down.

"Of course not. I remember everything clearly! He definitely drank it," came Xena's defense. "Why? Young Master Clark, what's going on? Are you suspecting that I'm lying?"

A thought occurred to Xena, and her expression immediately turned cold. "I risked my life and worked undercover for you guys. Do you know how nervous I was? I was so afraid that Jack would catch onto what I was doing, and I could only take a breather when I saw him drinking water from that mineral bottle. How dare you suspect I'm lying!"

Ivan turned to Ken and said, "Young Master Clark, what happened exactly? Why would you ask Xena this? She doesn't need to lie to us, even if she didn't succeed."

It was only then when Ken said, "It's been more than a dozen days since Jack took the poison, right? The

poison would've taken effect after ten days, and we're all waiting for him to die painfully during Selena's birthday. However, I've sent two different groups of people out to get him. I wanted to test how his body was faring, and I wanted to exact vengeance."

Ivan and Young Master Taylor looked at each other, somewhat excited when they heard this.

"How was it? It isn't possible that his body has no symptoms, right?" fretted Xena.

Ken took a deep breath and stated, "I think he's not poisoned. The first time I sent people after him, nothing much happened since he had his bodyguards with him. The second time, my cousin, Flynn asked several masters from the Young family over, and..."

Ken halted for a good while before he anxiously remarked, "I think Jack's got fighting capabilities rivaling that of a marshal."

"A marshal?" The faces of Ivan and the others darkened. If that was the case, it would be very difficult to get rid of Jack.

"No wonder! It's no wonder the pretty assassin we hired previously was unable to kill this guy. He had been hiding his true strength!" Neil instantly blurted as he soon remembered something.

"That's impossible. I don't think that's possible!" Ivan shook his head. "Why would he hide his true strength if he's a marshal? Why didn't he tell the Taylor family? If that's the case, the old master would definitely be pleased with that. More importantly, Fiona and the others would've accepted him happily the moment he came back from his time in the army!"

Chapter 719

Xena—who sat by the side—was deep in thought with a frown.

It was not long until her eyes soon brightened up and she exclaimed, "I get it! This guy must've been afraid of Fiona, Ben, and the others spending his money! That must be it! I heard that majors come back with a billion dollars as a reward from the government when they retire. If this guy's a marshal, he might have a few billion with him, right?"

Ivan also immediately nodded. "That's right, that's right. This one's plausible. This guy might've wanted to hide the fact that he has a lot of money."

Ken, on the other hand, wore a tight smile on his face. "You guys are definitely imagining things. If Jack has several billion, I'll write my name wrongly."

"If that's the case and you don't think so, what do you think the reason is, Young Master Clark? Apart from being a marshal himself, I can't think of any other reason for his unwillingness for Fiona, Ben, and the others to spend his money!" Xena confidently folded her arms across her chest; she believed she was right.

Ken smiled indifferently and commented, "I went through the idea with my cousin before, and we both feel that Jack couldn't present the token despite claiming he's a head commander. He's no head commander, that's for sure. He's definitely not some team leader; he has to be just some regular, run-off-the-mill soldier."

Xena cackled, followed by her rebuttal, "How's that possible? Didn't you say it yourself that Jack's fighting ability is somewhat like a marshal's? How can he be a normal soldier? Aren't you contradicting your own words? You're getting off-track here!"

"Yes, his fighting power was almost like a marshal's. Even if he's not a marshal, he must be considered one of the strongest among the majors!"

Ken smiled indifferently and commented, "What does it mean if he's so powerful but is just a normal soldier? It means that he must've done something wrong during his time in the army, and he couldn't keep his title."

Ivan finally understood what Ken's train of thoughts was soon after. "I get it now! He'd surely be scolded by Fiona and the others if he says that he has a title of either a marshal, or a major, or a head commander but couldn't keep it. Moreover, it'd be rather shameful if others heard about this, right?"

Finally, Xena and Neil also caught on. It seemed that Jack was ashamed to tell this to the others, so he kept his actual strength and the true situation a secret.

Neil soon remembered something and said, "Hey, if Jack used to be some head commander or major, would the country still reward him now that he's a veteran?"

"The country will," came Ken's reply. "I heard someone talking about this before. After all, people who were once majors still made huge contributions to the country. The country wouldn't abandon people like Jack who was in the army for five years, and they'd surely give these people a reward or two."

Ken paused before he added, "However, for people like Jack who's made mistakes and were demoted to a normal soldier, the rewards might go from one billion to two or three hundred million. If the rewards were originally two to three billion, it might've been reduced to five hundred million. The money would've been decreased by quite a lot."

As they talked among themselves, Xena then recalled something. "If Jack really was a marshal like the estimation of Young Master Clark, doesn't that mean he has around five to six hundred million now?" It was as though she was hit with a Eureka moment; as though she had seen through everything. "No wonder... It's no wonder that guy could claim he's going to host a huge city-stirring birthday party for Selena. This guy had to have a few hundred million with him right now; four to five hundred million at least!"

Chapter 720

"That makes so much sense! No wonder this guy dared to boast about hosting Selena's birthday grandly. He's confident because he has the means to do so!" came Ivan's reply as he, too, saw the clearer picture. "F*ck... Jack had been so low-profile that we thought he only had several million with him. It genuinely didn't occur to me he'd have four to five hundred million. If he really had that much, it should be enough to spend around one to two hundred million on the party!"

“Damn it! I was waiting to see him clowning himself. Well, isn’t that just great! We probably won’t get to see him failing miserably like we had thought. At this rate, he can host a grand birthday party after all!” fumed Neil. He poured himself some wine and downed it in one go.

“Come, the dishes have been served. Let’s chat while we drink.” Just like that, Ivan’s mood turned sour as well.

“I’m even angrier at the fact that we’ve spent several million to advertise the party for them, in hopes that everyone would turn up to see him embarrass himself silly.” Like Ivan, Ken also poured himself a big glass of wine and drank it in one go. “Suddenly, everything falls into place for him,” he hissed, “while we’ve wasted so much money. F*ck! What did we get out of spending such a big amount of money? He can easily go ahead and carry out such a lavish birthday party. Didn’t we help him out and cut his costs? We’ve cut off several million for him!”

“Tch! I even borrowed some money from my friends and said that I’ll pay him back. I borrowed that money just to help fund the ads for this jerk!” Neil sighed and was helpless. His father had strict control over him and was afraid that he would cause trouble, thus Neil’s pocket money was reduced monthly.

“It’s not entirely useless. We still played him!” Ivan laughed and drank a mouthful of wine slowly before he added, “Regardless, he has no idea that he’s been poisoned. So what if the party stirs up the city? Isn’t everyone there to see his funeral? To see how he dies?”

“Young Master Taylor, we’re unhappy that we’ve spent money to advertise for him, but we’re more concerned that he’s not poisoned! That’ll be a huge trouble!” Ken was downright worried as he eyed Xena warily. “That’s why I rushed to ask Miss Xena if she really saw Jack drink the poison!”

Angered by the implication, Xena’s hand instinctively raised as she snapped, “Young Master Clark, how many times do I need to say this before you believe me? I, Xena Jackson, swear to the skies. If I didn’t see Jack drink the poison with my own eyes, I’ll get struck by lightning!”

Ken had no other choice than to believe that Xena did not lie to them when he heard what she said.

“Alright, we believe you.” Ken was quiet for some time before he spoke, “I was just very anxious, worried that Jack had bribed you and that you pretended to be with Young Master Taylor so that you can get intel about us. Seems like that’s not the case and all is fine.”

“How... How dare you doubt me like that?!” Xena’s chest heaved in anger when she heard this. She looked at Ken angrily and exploded, “I’m truly in love with Ivan. Don’t make assumptions all the time! I’ll get very angry if you say that again!” No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 721-725

Chapter 721

“Xena’s got a point, Young Master Clark. You’re overthinking it.” Ivan’s facial expression darkened, just like Xena’s.

Ken offered a small, wary smile before he explained, “I’m only doing things for everyone’s sake. After all, it’s not easy to deal with Jack. We used to think that he was good in martial arts because he was enlisted in military service for five years. How could we have known that he hid his power, the prowess like that of a marshal’s?”

At that moment, Xena recalled something. “I remember something,” she began. “I remember Quil Xenos asked a marshal to fight with Jack, though Jack eventually killed him. I heard that this marshal was Magnus Sutherland’s apprentice who got his title because of Magnus’s influences in the army. Jack said it then that this guy didn’t have the power of a marshal, and that he was lucky to have won over this marshal.”

Xena then surmised, “With this new information, that might not be the case. Even if the marshal was slightly weaker, his capability in fighting shouldn’t be that far off from any other marshal. Jack is definitely a marshal if he’s able to kill that person. Goodness... That guy tricked me into believing his words!”

“This guy hid his true strength well!” Neil exclaimed.

“Let’s recall everything we can confirm. Firstly, Jack has about four to five hundred million dollars with him, and that’s enough for him to host a city-stirring birthday party in Eastfield. We’ve wasted money to do free advertisements for him.

“Secondly, Jack’s strength can be equated to a marshal’s, though he must’ve lost his title due to some unknown reason, so he hid his true identity and strength.

“Thirdly, we can rest assured he’s consumed the poison. Somehow, the poison doesn’t seem to have an obvious effect on him, and he’s still astonishingly strong!” concluded Ken as he eyed everyone in the room. “Alright, tell me now: What should we do next?”

“You guys told us that the poison would take some time to take effect, so it might be normal for us to not see the effect now, right?” started Ivan as he offered his analysis. “The later days will be the most crucial period, and Jack would be physically tortured by then. His body will rot and he’ll die in pain. It might be normal for his fighting ability to still be at its best if you test his condition right now.”

Ken assessed what Ivan had said and nodded in agreement. “It seems that we should stop employing people to test him. Otherwise, we’ll have a repeat of what happened today. We not only lost several people in the fight, but he nearly found me out. It was really not worth it. Let’s just wait patiently for Jack to die during Selena’s birthday.”

Neil also nodded in agreement. “Agreed. He’s poisoned and is a dying man. We don’t need to beat him up to vent our frustrations. After all, if he’s still strong, we’d only suffer a huge loss. Let’s also not forget his guy is really good at planning out things, and you’ve said it yourself that his bodyguards are quite strong. Let’s just patiently wait for another twenty days.”

Xena sipped her red wine, and her lips curled up into a smirk. “I used to think that this guy is a useless son-in-law, but I never thought he’d be so smart and play us like fiddles. Lucky for us, he had drunk the poison. Otherwise, we’d never take him down even with all of us combined.”

“Oh, right. I almost forgot something!” Ivan soon remembered something and his eyes lit up. Guffawing, he boasted, “Even if Jack has the money to give Selena a city-stirring birthday party, he’ll bring nothing but shame to himself!”

Chapter 722

“Bring nothing but shame to himself? What are you talking about? He can host an extravagant birthday party if he has the money, right? Why will it be shameful for him?” Both Ken and Neil were stunned at Ivan’s sudden burst of confidence.

Ivan laughed heartily before he replied, “It’s because one of my cousins is getting married. Do you guys know Cecilia? She’s getting married to the Gold family’s young master. Nevermind the other details, but Cecilia is holding her wedding dinner on the same day as Selena’s birthday party. One is a wedding, the other is a mere birthday party. Which one do you think Old Master Taylor and members of the Taylor family will attend?” Ivan cackled again, and his eyes gleamed with pure satisfaction. “I really like Cecilia. She’s obviously doing this to Selena on purpose!”

“Pro move!” chortled Ken as he clapped gleefully. “Now that we’ve helped Jack with the ads, the entire city is aware of the birthday party. He’ll be in so much shame if so many seats are prepared for the party but no one is attending!”

“Oh yes, this cousin of yours is really amazing! She didn’t choose any other day but insisted to choose the same day as Selena’s party! That’s really amazing!” beamed Neil, a huge grin on his face as he did. “Even if Jack changes the date now, he can’t escape the people’s mockery. After all, it’s not good to change dates for something as important as a birthday party. It doesn’t help him that the party has been advertised all over the place!”

Ivan laughed again, elated at how the tables had turned. “I rang up Cecilia after I heard what happened, just to get the entire story. She told me that Jack was really stubborn and refused to change the dates. He insisted on having the party on the same day as Cecilia’s wedding. This guy is asking for it! Serves him right.”

“Serves him right, indeed. He’ll suffer if he insists on saving his face. If he eventually decides to shift their party to two days early, people from the Taylor family might be there. If that’s the case, he wouldn’t be in such an embarrassing situation. The Taylors will definitely attend Cecilia’s wedding instead of Selena’s birthday party at this rate. It’s hard for them to not feel embarrassed!” Xena giggled, obviously pleased as well.

“Not moving the party to earlier dates is a good thing. If he doesn’t do that, how can we see the moment when he succumbs to the poison at the party? Am I not right?” Neil laughed and raised his wine glass. “It’s decided then. We’ll sit back and wait to see how Jack will die twenty days from now.”

“Alright! Cheers!” Ken and the others stood up and had an early celebration.

...

The next morning, Jack went to work at the Drake family’s residence as usual.

Meanwhile... A man appeared in the Eagle Clan’s operating base and came toward Lee with a smile on his face. “Chief, great news! I’ve retrieved good information!”

Pleased with this, Lee replied, “Really? Did you find information that the people from Green Sky Hall are still secretly taking photos of others?”

The man nodded. “Not only did they secretly take photos, but they even sold those photos to some websites and made deals with a mysterious power overseas without anyone knowing. Apart from that, we have news that they’ll trade at City God Temple, located on the outskirts of Seven Dragons’ Mountain. That temple is already in ruins, and they often trade there.”

Downright elated with this, Lee went to the masters and hosted a discussion among themselves.

In the afternoon, at the Drake family’s residence...

“Hey, Jack,” greeted Tanya. “It’s been a long time since we played billiards. Come play with us. Do you know how?” Tanya smiled and glanced at Jack. This guy grew increasingly handsome the more she looked at him. She had no idea why, but she noticed she grew giddy whenever he came to work.

Chapter 723

“Billiards? I’ve never played that, but if Miss Tanya wants to go out and play, I’ll follow you. After all, I’m your bodyguard.” Jack smiled, at ease when he noted the time—two in the afternoon—and Sharon was nowhere in sight.

It appeared Sharon finally understood and conceded from trying to win him over. Although what he said during the previous meal they had was slightly overboard, the aftereffect was worth it. At the very least, this girl stopped pestering him.

As he was about to leave in a car with Tanya and Yvonne, something unexpected happened. A sports car followed by several Audis entered the grounds and was parked not far away from where they were.

“Hey, Tanya! Are you guys heading out? It seems like I’ve made it just in time. You would’ve been long gone if I came a little later!” There was a small yet sweet smile on Sharon’s face. She looked like a fashionista with her sunglasses on, and her black hair was styled into big wavy curls.

Jack was dumbfounded when Sharon made her appearance. It seemed that his way of blatantly rejecting her and cozying up with Selena did not work.

Before all this, Sharon was not even familiar with both Tanya and Yvonne and seldom kept in touch, but Sharon had been coming over a little too often. If it was not for him, what was it for?

Even the Drake family bodyguards were discussing this in private; all of them wished that they were Jack. They wondered if Jack was a dumb guy as he turned down the persuasion of such a pretty woman.

“Yes, you’re right on time. It seems like you’ve gone for a hair-do this morning, no? This hairstyle looks good!” Tanya smiled and said to Sharon, “We’re going to play billiards. How about that? Do you want to come with us?”

“Billiards? That sounds good!” Sharon giggled. “Although I’m not very good at it, I play it all the time. Let’s go!”

Sharon did not even exit her car and chirped, “Lead the way!”

Her eyes then shifted to Jack, then to the empty passenger seat beside her. “Jack, you don’t have to drive; there’s not enough space for everyone. Come, I’ll be your driver just this once.”

Tanya and Yvonne glanced at each other after they heard this, and they had to stifle their giggles.

“Alright. Since Miss Sharon doesn’t dislike me, I’ll take up your offer graciously.” Jack smiled bitterly. Since she made the invitation, it seemed too abrupt to reject her. Apart from that, would it not seem too cowardly if he did not even sit next to her?

Sharon was inwardly happy when she saw Jack agreeing to her suggestion. Once Jack got in, Sharon tailed after Tanya and Yvonne’s car that left first.

“Jack, does... Does my hairstyle look good?” Sharon could not help it. She had to ask him as she glanced at him from the corner of her eyes.

At a loss of words, Jack merely answered, “It looks good.”

“That’s great. Nothing is more important than you feeling that it looks good!” At that moment, Sharon felt butterflies in her stomach.

Chapter 724

Not long after, several cars were parked outside of a lavish-looking mall.

“Wait downstairs. We’ll be upstairs for some entertainment, so you guys can find a place and enjoy some milk tea if you want.” Sharon gave her bodyguards several hundred dollars and added, “Jack is here, so it should be fine for us to go upstairs and play billiards for a while.”

“Alright! Thank you, Miss Sharon!” The bodyguards received the money respectfully and left happily.

As they walked, Jack inspected the area and said, “This place looks quite high-end. Playing billiards here must be quite expensive.”

“I’ve been here several times, and the billiards hall upstairs is quite nice. They have all sorts of drinks and dessert for free, though the fee here is based on per entry. It’s a thousand dollars per person, no matter how many hours you play here.” Tanya smiled and added, “There’s four of us here, so it’s four thousand dollars.”

Jack nodded. “If that’s the case, then we’ll have to play a little longer. It’d be a waste of that much money if we don’t.”

Jack’s comment made Yvonne roll her eyes at Jack. “We’re not asking you to pay. You’re here to company us, so we’re going to pay. Apart from that, it’s only several thousand dollars. How’s that expensive? Didn’t you just receive twenty million dollars worth of salary?”

“But this is how it’s calculated!” Jack offered a smile, but the sight of a person not far away soured his grin. “Isn’t that Young Master Drake?”

Tanya looked and was slightly surprised. Her expression darkened. “Big brother!”

She had gotten wind that her brother recently meddled with people from the Turner family and was progressively gambling with billiards. Not only did he lose money, but he even went looking for prostitutes with these people.

If this continued, he would be damaged like those people.

Meanwhile...

“F*ck, I’ve lost again!” snapped Timothy.

“Be patient and take it slow, Young Master Drake. Your skills have gotten better! Didn’t I lose the last game to you?” The man with a cue stick that stood opposite Timothy laughed and added, “Apart from that, ten million per round is still affordable to you, right Young Master Drake?”

Timothy pulled his collar and said, “Ten million is nothing; I can afford that. That’s a small amount of money to me!”

He walked over, took a bottle of beverage and started drinking. After he had large gulps, he growled, “Of course, it’s only natural that I’m unhappy since I’ve lost a game that I almost won. We’ve played ten games today, and I’ve only won two. I’m furious!”

The man chuckled and reminded Timothy, “It’s been ten games. We make the payment once every ten games. As I’ve won six games more, that’d be sixty million, Young Master Drake!”

The corners of Timothy’s mouth slightly twitched before he took out his cellphone. “Don’t you worry, I’ll transfer the money to you now!”

Chapter 725

“Are we still playing?” The man opposite Timothy asked him if their game was still up for another round after he received the money.

Seemingly delirious, Timothy vehemently replied, “Of course! Let’s do another ten more games. I’m not satisfied until I win more games than you!”

At that moment, someone else noted Tanya and her company entering the billiards hall. "Hey, we've got a few angels coming this way!" One of the men standing beside the billiards table could not hide his grin.

Timothy instantly turned to see Tanya and the rest, and he murmured, "Tanya? Why is she here? She walks around with this bodyguard all day long, too. Tsh! The old master and the rest think that this guy is, at the very least, a King of War. Less to be known, he's admitted that he's only a head commander with no token. I really don't understand why they pay him such a high salary as a bodyguard!"

The man playing billiard beside Timothy was a young master from a third-class aristocratic family. His name was Leo Turner and was great friends with Michael Wilson. He could not help but smile when he heard this and went right next to Timothy. "Young Master Drake, there's a simple solution. He's just a bodyguard, and we only need to think of a way to play him. Ask him for a game with me, and see how I can punish him!"

Timothy chuckled and replied, "It'd be great if you could do that!"

"Hey, isn't this Miss Tanya? Oh, and Miss Sharon is also here? That's quite rare!" Leo immediately moved forward to greet Tanya and the group when he saw them coming in.

Tanya did not respond to him kindly as she eyed him icily. "So you're the one who's been bringing my brother to fool around?" she sneered.

"What are you talking about, Miss Tanya? What do you mean by fooling around?" Leo looked at the three beautiful women in front of him with a smile on his face, and he discreetly swallowed his saliva. These three ladies were the object of obsession for many rich young masters at the moment. People would surely envy him if he managed to marry one of them.

This went especially for Miss Tanya and Miss Sharon; they had high ranks after all. If he managed to marry them, he would be marrying above his status.

Although Yvonne was only Tanya's cousin, her figure was even sexier. This alone was enough to cause men go crazy over her.

"You guys aren't working, and that's fooling around in my book!" Unbothered to even entertain the man, she turned to Timothy and asserted, "You should avoid going to shady places with these people. It's fine to play some billiards games, but don't gamble with others if you can't contest. I heard that you've lost quite some money recently."

Timothy smiled coldly when he heard this. "Oh my, Tanya. You're meddling things that aren't of your concern. I know Father pampers you and that you're well received by the people of the Drake family. Now that your power grows, you want to control your big brother's affairs?"

It was plain to see Timothy resented Tanya for being favored by James, their father. He had changed after being with the young master of the third-class aristocratic family—Leo Turner—for a long time.

"Timothy, what are you talking about? You're my brother. How can I not butt in now that you're fooling around with these people and have been gambling more and more on billiards? I'm only reminding you of better things. Don't you know that trifling destroys the will?" Tanya was seething. She felt that the brother before her had changed into another person in just a month's time.

Unable to hold back her frustration, she snapped, "Don't think that I don't know anything. You constantly visit those so-called entertainment places, and they're unorthodox ones with these kinds of people. My friends saw this with their own eyes and told me this. They've seen you there more than once! I'll tell Father if you continue down this road!"

"Are you threatening me?" Timothy chuckled mockingly. "Which rich person now doesn't like to play? Also, how dare you say that it's an unorthodox place? I went for massages at regular places. Don't throw accusations blindly without providing concrete proof!" No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 726-730

Chapter 726

At that moment, Timothy looked slovenly, as though he had not groomed himself in ages. He looked like a good-for-nothing at first glance—nothing close to how he used to look like.

Disappointment weighed Tanya down, seeing her brother like this. Her brother had been mingling with the young men before him, all from third-class aristocratic families or wealthy families. Now, after one or two months, it felt as though he was a completely different person.

Sharon noticed that the siblings were getting worked up. She immediately stepped forward and plastered a smile onto her face as she spoke, “Don’t bother about him, Tanya. Men have their own ways of relieving stress. Let’s play billiards instead. Aren’t you pretty good at it? Let’s play one round!”

“All right then!”

Tanya tamped down on the anger building inside her, trying to console herself. Maybe she was overthinking this—maybe her brother was not the man she thought he was. Maybe he was just indulging himself in some fun. Maybe he was not like the others.

“What a lovely sister you have!”

“Right? Must be nice having a little sister looking after the big brother. Maybe she’ll be the one to ‘look after’ the Drake family in the future!”

The person accompanying Leo also began to curve his lips into a cruel smile.

“Hey, you. You play billiards?”

At this moment, Leo placed the cue stick to the side and asked Jack.

Jack looked around him before finally pointing at himself. “Are you asking me, sir?” he asked.

“That’s right. You’re that good-for-nothing son-in-law from the Taylor family, right? You really had gold falling onto your lap, being able to marry a beauty like Selena Taylor. That sort of luck would make anyone jealous!”

Leo took out a cigarette and lit it, sticking it into his mouth. “Sure, I’m jealous,” he said, expression scornful, “but I have to say that it’s like trying to stick a bunch of fresh flowers onto a pile of cow sh*t.”

“Really? Nothing I can do about it though. I had pretty good luck, I suppose. I’ve always had pretty good luck!”

Jack was not offended by his words. Instead, he smiled and shrugged his shoulders.

However, Sharon was rendered unhappy in a flash when she heard this.

How could she not get mad, when someone straight up slandered her idol?

Her expression immediately darkened. “Leo, right? What are you talking about? You have no idea how magnificent of a man Jack is,” she said. “You’re not even worthy of polishing his shoes if you were to pit yourself against him. Do you know that? And a bunch of fresh flowers stuck onto a pile of cow sh*t? He and his wife are a match made in heaven. I even think Selena is the one who can’t match up to him!”

“Seems like this son-in-law is being held in very high esteem by Miss George!”

Leo grinned when he heard this, apparently not angry. “I’ve always heard that the young miss of the George family has had her eyes set on this good-for-nothing. I thought that it wasn’t true. Who knew that it was!”

Another man ducked his head and rubbed his nose. “Ah. I really never thought that a young heiress to a

first-class aristocratic family would actually fall in love with a married man," he mumbled. "Doesn't she feel ashamed? It won't do good for the George family's reputation if word of this got out!"

Chapter 727

"What does this have to do with you? Whoever I like has nothing to do with you! Besides, can any of you match up to his brilliance?"

Sharon was extremely furious. However, the moment she remembered that Jack was right beside her, she forced herself to maintain the image of a well-behaved lady. She suppressed the rage within her and debated with the other man.

Jack could only give a wan smile before these clowns. "So you're called Leo? Why did you ask me if I could play billiards, Young Master Leo?" he asked. "I don't know how to play. After all, I was just a delivery boy before I was enlisted into the military!"

"I thought so. After all, to us, military people are just reckless fools. Naturally, you wouldn't know of such a game of gentleman nature, since all you know is how to fight and kill!"

Leo chuckled, his expression disdainful. "I even thought of asking you to play a few rounds against me if you knew how to," he said. "But it seems that I'm destined for disappointment. I'll just play with Young Master Drake!"

"It's true that I don't know how to play. But I've watched a few rounds earlier. It doesn't seem too hard. You just have to aim for the white ball and make sure you pocket another ball with it, right?"

Jack said after he thought for a while.

Quite a few of the men could not help but giggle when they heard this.

“You’re putting it way too easily, mister. This is a game of skill. Why would it be that easy? It requires technique to get the strength and angle right. Besides, did you really think that the game would be over after you pocket the balls belonging to you? And there are rules to billiards. This game we’re playing is called ‘snooker’. You’ve never heard of it, have you? playing against you? Forget about it!”

A man just straight up burst into laughter.

“Don’t speak such nonsense, Jack. A game like this isn’t that easy. People who don’t play it often can’t master it as well as those who have. Besides, I’ve played this for two years, but my skill is a far cry from that of my brother’s, Leo’s, and the others!”

Tanya tugged on Jack’s sleeve as she chided him. It was obvious that he knew nothing, from the way he spoke of it as though it was an easy game. If word got out about this, he would definitely be taken as the joke of the century by people who frequently played billiards.

“But we can’t just allow ourselves to be underestimated like that!”

Jack gave a bitter smile. Then he said to Tanya, “Why don’t you explain all the rules to me first? Teach me the techniques to play this game. Then I’ll have a little contest with this scoundrel.”

When they heard this, Tanya, Yvonne, and Sharon were all stunned speechless, to the point that they wanted to spew blood. This punk did not know the rules, and he still wanted to play against Leo? It was practically a throwaway match!

“Woah, woah, woah. Did you guys hear that? You heard that, right? This p*nk doesn’t even know the rules of the game. He doesn’t know which balls to pocket first, and which balls that follow after. And yet he wants a match against me?”

Leo immediately felt that it was funny when he heard those words. His friends also began to laugh.

Another young master from a wealthy family told Jack, “Let me tell you this, punk. Our Young Master Leo here can pocket 70 to 80 points in one sitting when he’s in good form. He’s even been dubbed as the ‘Prince of Billiards’. Very few here can match up against him. You’ve never played before, and you want to play against him? Are you kidding me?”

When he heard this, Jack turned toward Timothy. “If you put it that way, are you saying that Young Master Drake is an idiot as well? After all, Leo is the Prince of Billiards, but Young Master Drake still dared to play against him. Isn’t it obvious that he’s playing a losing game?”

“You...”

Young Master Drake was extremely angry. That stupid punk—was daring enough to call him an idiot!

His expression instantly hardened. “The f*ck are you talking about, Jack?” he said. “You’re the bodyguard of the Drake family. It also means that I’m your master. And you dare to say something like that to me? Aren’t you afraid of getting fired?”

Chapter 728

He had thought that Jack would be scared to death when he said something like that. After all, he was a bodyguard who was paid 20 million dollars a month. It was probably the only job in the entire Eastfield that paid that much. Who knew how many people would clamor after it?

He would not have spared this punk’s reputation if his father and the others did not suspect that there was something more to Jack—that this brat was hiding his true identity.

After all, this punk raked in such a huge salary, yet he seemed not to care about his family, coming whenever he liked and leaving whenever he pleased. More importantly, his father and his sister were pleased with him.

Furthermore, during Old Man Taylor’s seventieth birthday party, this punk claimed that he had lost his badge. Would a King of War use such a tactic to hide his identity?

Everyone thought that he was a marshal. Even then, it might not be true.

“I’m not scared of words like that. Did you really think I wanted to be a bodyguard for your family? If your family didn’t help mine, and if you hadn’t helped my wife to find a job, I would have had zero interest in being a bodyguard for your family!”

Jack chuckled. “Besides, it was Miss Tanya who gave me the job,” he said nonchalantly. “You have no say in it!”

“You...”

Timothy was practically on fire. This punk actually dared to say something like that right in front of his friends. Jack did not care about embarrassing him at all.

Leo tugged on Timothy, noticing that he was steaming from the ears. “Hey, why are you getting so worked up over a bodyguard when you’re the young master of the Drake family?” he reminded the other man. “Who are you, and who is he? How can he ever compare to you!”

Timothy dusted the sleeves of his shirt and straightened himself. “Well...”

“Oh, right. Hey punk, you said that billiards is easy, right? Then why don’t you play against me? Ten million dollars per round. What do you say? Since you’re so gung-ho about it, do you dare to have a match against me? We always play ten million dollars per round. I have no interest in a wager smaller than that!”

Leo’s features were twisted into a goading expression as he spoke to Jack, “I think you should just forget about it, a layman like you trying to play a gentleman’s game such as this.”

“Why not? But I’m not interested in a wager of ten million dollars per round. If we play, let’s play big. One hundred million per round. And let’s play ten rounds. Do you dare to do it?”

No one expected Jack to retort after he heard that, chuckling.

Leo had just wanted to stir Jack into a fury. He never thought that he would actually accept the bet—and not only that, he even proposed to raise the wager to one hundred million dollars per round.

“Are you nuts, Jack?”

Shock jolted up Tanya’s spine. “You can’t just agree to that even if you’re betting on your pride!” she protested. “You’ve never played billiards before. How are you going to beat him?”

“Yeah. One hundred million dollars per round is too much. If you’re not convinced of that, then just take it down to ten million dollars per round. You’ll still get a chance to play against him!”

Yvonne also chimed in to advise him, “Besides, it’s obvious that he wants to get a rise out of you. Can’t you see that?”

“That’s right. Don’t agree with that, Jack. Don’t bet with him!”

Sharon said as well.

Yet Jack did not care about their protests at all. “What do you say?” he said to Leo. “Are you daring enough to play with one billion on the table?”

Leo replied, smiling, “Are you serious, p*nk? Sure thing. But I truly suspect that you don’t have that much cash on you right now.”

“Don’t worry about me. Just worry about yourself. If I can’t pay up at the end, I’ll just chop my hand off and offer it to you. How about that?”

Jack said, smiling coldly.

Although he did not play this game before, he had been observing it from a distance a while ago. He felt that it was not too difficult. The only thing was that he did not know the rules of the game.

“Sure thing. But you still don’t know the rules. How about this? Young Master Drake and I will put on a free show for you. You just stand at the side and watch us play. We’ll explain the game as we go along. How about that?”

Chapter 729

Leo smiled as he spoke to Jack.

“Okay. You better be sure of this. I won’t let you off if you can’t fork out that much money by the end of all this!”

Jack agreed, nodding his head.

Leo smirked instead. “I’ve won quite a lot lately. I have at least 5 hundred million in my credit balance now. I don’t believe that you’ll beat me more than five times in ten games!”

“Anyway, if you want to win more than five games in ten rounds, you have to win at least eight and lose two. If you win seven and lose three, then you’ll only get four hundred million dollars!”

Another man grinned. “Furthermore, it’s practically impossible for someone like you to win, seeing as how you’ve never played this in your entire life.”

Sharon thought about it, then she clenched her teeth and stood up. "Jack, you can't just chop off your arm if you can't afford to pay. If you can't pay up, I'll help you pay!"

Jack was slightly touched when he heard that. He would be losing a billion dollars if he lost ten games in a row. It was an enormous sum of money.

He never thought that Sharon would put herself forward and offer to pay for him.

"Have you thought about it?"

Jack looked straight at her and asked.

"Of course. Don't worry. Fortunately, the George family is a first-class aristocratic family. We can afford to lose a billion dollars!"

Sharon replied confidently.

"But it's a billion dollars. Aren't you afraid that your parents would scold you?"

Jack felt speechless.

"Of course not. Besides, Papa and Mama like you a lot. They really want you as their son-in-law!"

As Sharon spoke, her cheeks grew redder. She could not help but duck her head out of embarrassment.

"But of course, a lovelorn woman is not a logical one!"

Timothy gave a frosty smile. “But now that Young Mistress George is standing up and offering to take the bill for this punk, Young Master Turner won’t have to worry about not getting his money any longer. His hand is of no use anyway, am I right?”

“Of course. A billion dollars is worth so much more than a hand from this p*nk!”

Leo guffawed, then he started the game. “Look closely, p*nk. It’s called a break-off shot.”

The two explained everything to Jack as they played, and Jack watched them very intently—how to control the opponent’s play, how to position the ball, among other things.

Leo and Timothy quickly finished their game. Timothy emerged victorious, and he had won by quite a big margin.

“F*ck. It’s a shame that we’re not placing bets on this round and just putting on a show for him!”

After he won, Timothy felt unsatisfied.

“Young Master Drake, can’t you tell that you’ve been played?”

Yet Jack chuckled coldly. “You won this round when there were no bets on the table. But in reality, it was Young Master Turner who had gone easy on you. It’s a pity that you’re so stupid that you couldn’t tell!”

Chapter 730

“What are you talking about, punk? How could I just go easy on someone when it’s about billiards?”

Leo was immediately agitated when he heard Jack's words, shooting a glare toward him.

"The f*ck you talking about? Won't I be able to tell if he was going easy on me?"

Timothy also spoke in a huff, "I'm a pretty good player!"

Yet Jack replied with a mirthless smile, "It's precisely because he went easy on you that you can't tell. His angle was off ever so slightly on purpose when he struck the ball, and pretended he almost pocketed a ball. He only needed to go easy once or twice during a game to allow you to win. Besides, you said it yourself—you're a pretty good player!"

Here, Jack paused for a while before continuing in a leisurely tone, "Furthermore, I think you've thought about why he would go easy on you, Young Master Drake. Would you still play with him if he never went easy on you, and if you kept losing ten rounds out of ten games? Of course, he would need to let you win a few rounds to let you savor the happiness of winning a bet! But it's obvious that overall, you lose more than you win. Let's say that you lose more than one hundred million dollars today, he'll probably let you win 20 million dollars the next day."

Timothy's expression darkened when he heard that. It was because he realized that whatever Jack said was true. Furthermore, Jack had never seen them play billiards before.

However, even after he had carefully thought about it, he still could not see how Leo had gone easy on him.

"What sh*t are you talking about! It's just my bad luck that I lost more, that's all. Sometimes I'm really just slightly off my game!"

Naturally, Timothy did not want to admit that he was a worse player compared than Leo. It was because he felt that he was already pretty skilled at the game, and was almost on par with Leo. If Leo truly went easy on him quite frequently, did that not mean that his friend was far, far stronger than him?

He would rather believe in Leo and the others than to lose face in this matter. Besides, Jack had no evidence to support his claims. He was just being ostentatious. It was possible that Jack was just trying to draw a rift between them, and so he said something like that.

“That’s right. It’s natural to win some and lose some when playing billiards, punk. We’re good friends with Young Master Timothy. How can we just do something like that to him?”

Leo also spoke up immediately.

After he said that, he was afraid that Jack would see right through his ruse, so he quickly changed the topic, “Cut the crap, punk. Are we still playing? We’ll play one hundred million dollars per round for ten rounds. And you can’t just give up halfway. For example, you can’t say that you want to withdraw after you lose one round. Withdrawing means that you automatically give up on the remaining nine rounds, and you’ll still have to pay me one billion dollars. Got it?”

“It—it’s so obvious that you’re bullying Jack because he’s new at this!”

Sharon was so angry that she stamped her foot against the ground. Leo was really a b*stard. They were putting a bet of ten billion dollars—ten whole billion dollars. It was not just a regular sum of money for a third-class aristocratic family.

“I’m bullying him? The f*ck are you talking about? I had proposed to play ten million dollars per round before. It’s this son-in-law from the Taylor’s who claimed that ten million was too little, raising it to one hundred million. Honestly, I’ve never placed such a big bet before either. It’ll definitely be exciting!”

Leo laughed and told Sharon.

Jack walked over straightaway and chose a cue stick. Then he walked toward Leo. “You’ve never placed such a big bet before? Then I hope that you won’t be so frightened by the numbers that you can’t be in your best form later—so scared that your hands begin to shake!”

The men in the area began to laugh. It was the first time that this punk was playing. He had just watched them play one round of billiards and had just gotten to know the rules. This was even his first time holding a billiard cue, and he actually dared to say something like that to the Prince of Billiards.

“Should you break, or will I have the honors?”

Leo smiled and asked Jack.

“You go ahead first. We’ll take turns breaking!”

Jack answered after he thought about it.No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 731-735

Chapter 731

“Very well then!”

The corners of Leo’s mouth curled upward. In the next second, the cue ball was struck with a great force that sent the red balls scattering around the billiard table.

However, unfortunately, none of the balls went into either of the pockets.

“Young Master Leo, seems like lady luck is not on your side!”

Jack could not help but laugh at the play. “Now, my turn! The position of the white cue ball is strategic, and several red balls are near to the pockets!”

“Yup. The white cue ball is in good position, but for a newbie like you, I don’t even have to plot a

defense. I scattered the balls just so I can beat you in a flash later on!”

Leo laughed.

Timothy flashed a wan smile at the situation as well. He sneered, “It seems simple. But when he can’t pocket any ball, he will know what makes a good billiard player!”

Once the last syllable of the word dropped, Jack mimicked Leo’s earlier posture and lay on his stomach on the edge of the billiard table. His posture seemed professional and in the next moment he struck out the cue ball with the cue stick, hitting a red ball.

“It’s pocketed!”

Sharon’s eyes widened as though she saw a ghost, and in the next second, she jumped like a kangaroo, celebrating for the pocketed ball. “Oh my goodness! It went in! Jack actually scored points in his first play! So freaking amazing!”

“Wow! The ball is pocketed and the strike was pretty accurate too!”

Tanya was puzzled at the scene before her. His posture was pretty professional, too. If he had not asked so many questions during the play between Timothy and Leo, Tanya would not have thought that Jack was a novice in billiards. His gestures were definitely close to the ones of experts.

“What’s the use of only pocketing one ball? There’re so many balls yet to be pocketed, and now it’s time to hit the colored balls.

Arms crossed before Yvonne’s chest, she whined. She felt worried for Jack, after all, it was her first time witnessing a billiard game with a one hundred million bet per round.

The crowd from the other nearby tables stopped whatever they were doing and switched their focus toward Jack's table.

After all, a bet of one hundred million per round was something else.

"I initially planned to make the white ball stop at this position so that I can aim for seven points. But I couldn't manage the strength well when I struck it out, and the white ball stopped at another position. Hmm. It's better for me to aim for six points then, especially for someone who has just started to learn how to play billiards. Seven points is too risky!"

Jack murmured to himself as he studied the positions of the balls on the table.

"This punk can really act like a pro, huh? Planning for the positions of the balls and aiming seven points? I think he just struck the cue ball randomly and bullsh*t!"

One guy from Leo's group sneered aloud.

At this time, Jack lay on his stomach again, getting ready for the next strike. After adjusting his cue stick, he flung his arm and struck the white cue ball. In a jiffy, a ball was pocketed and another six points went to Jack.

"What the f*ck? Another one? Although this is an easy one because it was in a straight line, as a newbie of billiard, how can he score so easily?"

The smile on Leo's face that was arrogant and brazen previously, had slowly morphed into a dry and bitter one. Worries and concerns gnawed inside him slightly. Was this punk pretending to be a newbie at this game? His preparation posture and the way he struck out the cue stick, all seemed too professionals.

“He pocketed another ball? Oh my!”

Tanya was jumping excitedly that her feet barely touched the ground. If the first score was due to luck then what about this time? Jack not only pocketed a six-pointer, but the cue ball stopped at a very strategic position where there were several easy red balls that could be pocketed with ease.

“It looks like Jack really knows how to plan the position of the cue ball!”

Sharon could barely conceal her excitement that her heavy breathing made her chest rise and fall repeatedly.

The boss of the place approached the group. He helped Jack to take out the ball that helped score the six-pointer from the pocket, set it nicely, and then smiled at Jack, “Young man, if this is your first time playing billiards, then you have learned it well. You’ll surely improve immensely after one or two days playing it!”

Jack flashed an indifferent smile in return. “Don’t worry, I’ve studied their play just now and I basically know how to hit and where to position the balls. As long as the aim is accurate and the strength is controlled well, it’ll be like shooting a gun. I was at master level in shooting when I was serving in the military!”

The crowd was at loss for words. How could this guy compare playing billiard to shooting guns?

“Stop spewing nonsense! Keep playing then. I don’t believe you’ll win the game!”

Leo tried his best to convince himself that this punk was like a blind cat who stumbled upon a dead rat—sheer luck. There were so many balls on the table yet to be pocketed anyway and each of them was in an excellent position however a minor mistake might just cost Jack his marks. As long as Jack made a mistake later, he would be able to come back in this game.

Furthermore, Jack, this punk was really bright. He actually saw through his ruse—he went easy on Timothy and lost the game on purpose.

After all, they did not place any bet on that game but was merely using it to explain the rules to Jack.

Moreover, he had won a lot of money from Timothy today. He just had to bring Timothy to some night club tonight and spent a couple hundred thousand on him to make him happy again. He not only won the money but at the same time also established a good relationship with Timothy. One stone killed two birds, why not?

The few hundred million in his credit balance were all from Young Master Drake these past few months or so. He would let Timothy win a few rounds occasionally, just to give him a sweet taste of winning.

Thud!

Just when he was swimming in his thoughts, Jack pocketed another red ball, at the same time positioned the white cue ball into a very strategic spot. He could strike for a seven-pointer.

Concerns reared up within Leo as he noticed that Jack was aiming for the seven-pointer. He kept his panic in check and convinced himself that Jack was just a newbie, he would not score this round!

Nevertheless, the scene before him had made him tongue-tied. Another seven points went to Jack's scoreboard. The strike was fast yet precise.

“Young Master Leo, do you think this punk is playing dumb about billiards? How could all these postures and striking techniques belong to a newbie?”

A guy who had been playing with Leo and the others all the while, came forward and voiced out his concerns to Leo.

“I don’t think he’s pretending. If he played it before, there’s no need to ask about the rules, right? Isn’t that act unnecessary?”

Leo’s forehead snapped together, not believing Jack was pretentious.

However, what made him speechless even more was that Jack had pocketed several balls in a row. The red balls on the table became fewer and fewer, and Jack’s marks on the scoreboard were increasing each time.

Finally, a seven-pointer did not enter the pocket.

Jack frowned at it, his face sunk, looking a little upset like a four-year-old boy.

“Damn, what a pity!”

Tanya breathed out a deep sigh at Jack’s last strike.

Sharon, on the other hand, switched her attention to the scoreboard and jumped excitedly. “Look, Tanya! Look at the points! Jack scored eighty points. He had actually scored a freaking eighty points in one go! This means that he has already won this round, and Leo has lost even if he finished off all the balls on the table!”

Chapter 733

“You’re right!”

Only then did the realization hit Tanya. Even if Leo pocketed all the remaining balls on the table, the highest score would only be sixty-seven, as the total point was only one hundred and forty-seven. And now Jack had scored more than half, did this not smell like victory?

"I...I won this round?"

Jack's face went blank and confused, then he opened his mouth, "But...but aren't there a few more balls on the table?"

"You... I'm speechless. The highest score that one can get is only 147 because the total point is only 147. You already scored 80 out of it. So, even if Leo finished off all the balls on the table, it's impossible for him to score more than you!" Yvonne explained patiently.

"Sounds about right!"

Joy dawned on Jack then he looked at Leo. "Now, Young Master Leo, it's your turn!"

At this point in time, Leo almost wetted his pants, sheens of cold sweat appeared on his forehead. This punk scored 80 points in one go. Even if he hit all the balls into the pockets, he had already lost!

"My turn your *ss! You win this round!"

Leo's fury sprang to life that he practically yelled at the owner of the place, "Boss, reset the game! We're going for the next round!"

The owner immediately went up and set up the balls. He shot Jack a thumbs up as he finished setting up the game. "Young man, amazing play! You're a genius among geniuses! Before the games, I studied you and realized that you are indeed a newbie. The posture is not particularly correct, and you took several seconds to adjust the cue stick for a better angle. Besides, there are hints of hesitation in your eyes sometimes, but at the later part of the game, you became better and better."

The owner's high praise toward Jack was like a sharp needle, piercing through Leo and the others'

eardrums. They could feel a flicker of irritation thrumming through their veins.

Timothy prayed that Jack would lose the game too, and it would be even more delightful for him to see Jack lose one billion. Even if Sharon offered to pay, Jack would still owe her a great favor—one that could not be repaid easily.

Never did he expect that Jack would win the first round.

Leo shot Jack an icy-cold glare and barked, “I shouldn’t have scattered the balls in the last game. I guess I’ve underestimated you and that’s why you scored. This time, I won’t go easy on you.”

Jack let out an adorable chuckle, flung the cue stick, and struck the white cue ball. The white cue ball touched the red ball lightly and it spread out a little from its original position. The white cue ball on the other hand, bounced back and halted behind a two-pointer ball.

“Snooker!”

The crowd exclaimed aloud, rubbed their eyes, trying to see clearly the current position of the white cue ball. The white ball happened to be blocked by the two-pointer yellow ball, which made it impossible for Leo to hit the red ball directly.

“Sheer luck! Must be sheer luck!”

“This doesn’t look like it’s merely sheer luck. The position of the white cue ball is just perfect!”

“Jesus Christ, Jack is good!”

Sharon was bursting with joy that she did her little happy dance. The sight of Sharon’s bouncing chest when she did her little dance had made the crowds’ Adam-apples move up and down. The sight before

them was just so phenomenal!

Everyone was excited and elated for the show except for Leo. His face twisted and several veins popped out in his neck. He thought that since Jack was a beginner, he would not know how to serve the first strike and scatter the balls on the table, then he would be able to pocket the remaining balls easily and take down this round.

The scene before him was truly out of his expectation. Now there was no chance for him to hit the red ball directly from where the white cue ball was at. He had to study and analyze the angle so that the white cue ball would hit the edge of the billiard table and bounce toward the direction of the red ball.

Thud!

Leo was truly a good player; his billiard skill was not bad at all. He managed to find an accurate angle for the white cue ball to hit the red ball.

However, he had also spread out the red ball further than before, leaving Jack an excellent stance to score!

Chapter 734

When his brain registered that the balls were widely scattered, his heart sank. He let out a heavy sigh and felt an ominous premonition appear in his heart.

“Thank you so much, Young Master Leo!”

An indifferent smile was hanging on Jack’s face as he walked over.

Leo wheeled, looked at his friend who was standing behind him, and commanded, “Bring me a bottle of mineral water! It’s so f*cking warm here. Dammit!”

The young man's forehead puckered, he could easily sense that panic was surging through Leo.

When it was a one hundred million bet per game and one tiny mistake would cost a hundred million dollars, who would not be in a sweat?

After all, the Turner family was merely a third-class family and they did not own many properties and assets. If Leo continued to lose today, his five hundred million dollars credit balance would not be able to pay up the loss.

The young man quickly grabbed a bottle of water and tossed it to Leo. Leo twisted it open and gulped it down.

In the meantime, Jack had pocketed several balls one after another and had scored more than 15 points.

"Oh my God! Good moves and great positions! Jack has hope to win this round again!"

Sharon did her happy leap and exclaimed. From the current situation, she saw hopes of Jack winning another round.

"Ughh, so annoying! Can you keep your voice down? This is a public area!"

He shot Sharon a dreadful stare. Leo's sensory system was so sensitive right now that Sharon's voice sounded like a screeching tone emitting from a violin played by a terrible violinist.

"what's the matter, Young Master Leo? Don't tell me your pants are wet right now? I think you can't afford to lose such an amount, right?"

Not only Sharon did not raise her voice after hearing Leo's complaint, but she enjoyed the view before her—Leo was agitated. She then continued, "What's wrong? Oh ya, where did that brazen attitude of yours 30 minutes ago go? Why did it disappear so soon?"

"Shut the f*ck up! Ughh!"

Another ball was pocketed, and Leo's expression grew darker and darker.

Not long after, the scoreboards showed 'Jack-79 points'.

"Hmmm...I think I won again? Only these few colored balls are left. Young Master Leo, do you want me to go easy on you? Otherwise, it'd be shameful for an expert like you to get zero points!"

Jack did not continue the game instead he smiled at Leo and voiced out his concerns.

The colors drained out of Leo's face and the corners of his lips twitched as though he had a stroke. His hand frantically searched for the water bottle. He grabbed the bottle and took a big sip, only to find that the bottle was empty—he drank it all moments ago.

"The second game is yours too!"

Leo wiped off the cold sweat on his forehead and barked xenophobically toward Jack, "I quit! You're a liar! You pretended to be a newbie when you're actually a master! F*ck! I'm so damn unlucky today. Give me your account, I'll transfer two hundred million dollars to you! I'm not playing with you anymore!"

Leo had noticed that this brat, Jack was playing better and better. He improved way too fast, and his techniques and his skills in this round seemed to be better than the first round. The time taken to aim was shorter than before as well. Now, his strike was more precise and his control of power was finer.

Leo, now, was truly frightened!

Chapter 735

Jack let out a loud chuckle in return upon hearing Leo's words. He smiled, "Sure, Young Master Leo, if you want to pull out now, that's okay too. But you have to transfer me a billion rather than two hundred million, right?"

Jack paused for a while and then continued, "Before the game, you'd clearly mentioned that we have to play ten rounds and can't just give up halfway. And if you want to withdraw right now, it means that you automatically give up on the remaining eight rounds. In that case, you have lost ten games!"

Leo's mouth twitched slightly at Jack's reminder. He had indeed said all these rules before the game, but he had never thought that Jack would be so strong. The thought of him losing billiard to a newbie like Jack had never crossed his mind!

He had already lost two hundred million. Even if his brain chose to continue playing, his heart would collapse before anything.

"Stop spewing nonsense. I quit! Just give me your account number and I'll transfer you two hundred million dollars. Who asked you to lie about your skill and told us that you've never played it before. You've clearly played billiard before and are skilled at it!"

Leo tightened his jaw and gritted his teeth. He denied whatever rules they set like a spoiled kid.

Jack swung his arm with the billiard cue stick in his hand and pointed it at Leo. His head tilted slightly upward, with a cold tone, he said, "I didn't lie. I learned those techniques by myself when I was watching both of you play a moment ago. If you don't believe me, I can't help it too. But you have only two options now, one is to admit defeat and transfer me 1 billion dollars, and the second option is to finish the remaining eight rounds. In case you're fortunate, you might win one round, who knows right?"

The corners of Leo's mouth vibrated again. This punk was totally insane. What did the punk say again? In case he was lucky, he might win one round?

According to Jack's performance in the first two rounds, it was not hard to see that Jack was getting better and better in striking and aiming, which made Leo insecure about the outcome. He had a strong premonition of not winning any of the remaining rounds.

"Hey, don't press too much, will ya? You're merely a bodyguard in the Drake family! If it weren't for Timothy or the Drake family, we'd have been greeting you with our fists!"

There was one guy in the crowd who appeared to be a good friend of Leo. He immediately stepped forward and sneered at Jack angrily.

"He's right! I played two rounds with you and promised to give you two hundred million. What else do you want? If it weren't for Young Master Timothy, we wouldn't give you a penny not to mention two hundred million! And by then what can you do to us, huh?"

Another took two-steps forward, his tone was arrogant.

Leo felt slightly calmer and a little bit more confident in his heart when he saw two of his friend speaking up for him. He snarled at Jack, "Brat, I'll give you two hundred million, tell me your account number if you want it. Otherwise, we're leaving to a bar to hang with Young Master Timothy since it's almost party time.

At this time, Jack slid the cue stick in his hand and blocked them from continuing their pathway. "I'll not repeat it again. You will either continue to play with me or admit defeat and give me one billion. It's as simple as that. But, if you dare to step out the compartment directly, you're digging your own grave!"

"What the f*ck! You're only a stinky piece of sh*t who had just returned from the military. What right do you have to act snobbishly?"

The first man that stood up for Leo had taken another step toward Jack and barked, “Get the f*ck out of my way!”

“Stinky piece of sh*t?”

This friend of Leo possessed the attitude that Jack hated the most—looking down upon the soldiers. They had sacrificed so much for Daxia, for the people of Daxia. Many of them had even given their lives to Daxia and would never be able to return home.

Now, this thug before him had actually insulted him and his comrades, and even despising them?

Jack did not hesitate and flicked the cue stick and sent it in a head-on collision toward the opponent’s arm.

Jack did not seem to use too much strength, but the man felt as though his bones were about to be powdered; his face grimaced and cried in great pain.

“Jack!”

At this moment, Timothy shot up from his seat and reprimanded solemnly, “They’re all friends of Leo, and Leo is my dear friend, which means they’re my friends as well. Now, listen to me, what has happened today in this center, let’s forget it, not for Leo but for me. Leo will transfer you 2 hundred million dollars and you’ll let us go. Do you hear me clear?”

“Young Master Drake, I’d suggest that you do not involve yourself in today’s matter. Before the game, they knew that I had not played billiard before and I am a newbie, hence, they kept on pressing, wanting to bully me and win my money!”

Jack snarled coldly in return. “Besides, I wanted to avenge you. They’ve fooled you and taken so much money from you. So this time, I’m sorry that I’d not follow your order!”

“Jack White, you’re merely a bodyguard of the Drake family! I’m the Young Master of the Drake family! I’m your master!”

Fury grew inside Timothy like a tumor. He was so angry that he raised his voice and yelled, “Starting on from today, you, Jack White, no longer work for the Drake family! You’re fired!” No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 736-740

Chapter 736

“Brother, what bulls*t are you spewing? I’m the one who hired Jack; you have no right to dismiss his employment! Besides, how could you fire him without getting father’s consent?” Tanya hissed angrily.

She became a ball of pure anger the next second she heard Timothy’s words.

“Hmph! He’s merely a bodyguard and I’m the Young Master. Do I need to ask for consent when I’m only firing a bodyguard? And don’t you know his real identity? A head commander! He’s only a head commander for God’s sake! Do we have to kneel before him and kiss his *ss?” Timothy replied in an icy-cold tone.

Tanya felt about to burst from the rage that she almost fainted. She never thought that this dear brother of hers would say such a statement.

She stomped her foot and yelled, “No matter what you said, you can’t decide this!”

“Don’t forget that I’m your brother and I’m the elder son in the Drake family!”

Timothy chortled sinisterly and then added, “Who asked this dog to bark at the wrong person? I’m his master. And a dog that barks at his master, what’s the point of keeping it? For him to bite me?”

Jack, on the other hand, sneered frostily at the exchange. He spoke, "Right, since Young Master Drake has said it pretty clearly, there's nothing left to say. I will not stay in this position for more humiliation. Perhaps there's a lot of people shaming me behind my back, saying things like 'Jack White is such a leech—leeching off the Drake family'."

Jack halted for a second and then continued, "Hmmm. I'm not emotionally nor physically attached to the bodyguard position. And Miss Tanya has already paid me last month's salary, as for the salary for these few days, let's forget about it. Consider these few days of service as my gratitude to Miss Tanya. But today Young Master Leo has to pay me the 1 billion dollars, there's no turnaround. If he doesn't pay, he can't leave!"

Once Leo heard what Timothy had announced regarding Jack's dismissal, his eyes lit up as though he saw light at the end of the tunnel. He then asked Timothy, "Young Master Drake, you've just fired him, right? He's no longer your bodyguard, isn't he? Since he's not one anymore, even if I have my people to beat him up, it won't affect our friendship, right?"

Timothy nodded in reply, but he reminded, "Of course. He's not our bodyguard anymore, it's up to you now. But one thing I must say, this punk is pretty good, I don't think your bodyguards are his match!"

"You dare?"

Sharon immediately stepped up and barked angrily. "Even if he's no longer the bodyguard of the Drake family, there's still the George family! Don't forget the George family is not a force to be reckoned with! If you dare to touch a single strand of his, you're going against me, Sharon George!"

"Oh, Miss George, are you now trying to play the superhero now? Why though? He not only has a wife, but I also heard that he is not interested in you at all! Is it worth it to sacrifice so much for a married man?"

Leo sneered at Sharon's protective demeanor toward Jack. His face became dark and dull. After all, Sharon was the only daughter of the George family—a first-class aristocratic family in Eastfield. He was from a third-class family, hence naturally he did not want to offend her, and her treatment had successfully frightened him.

“Why do you care? Even if I don’t like him, he’s still my friend, and I should help my friend!”

Sharon nibbled on her bottom lip tightly as she gawped. She looked toward Jack for a second.

“Miss Sharon, Thank you for your kind intention!”

Jack was slightly moved by Sharon’s action, but he looked at Sharon with a solemn and firm face.

“However, I don’t like to owe favors to others, not to mention, this is my personal affair with Young Master Leo, and I don’t like others to interfere. I’ll handle this matter by myself. Thanks.”

“But...”

Sharon felt a stab of disappointment inside her heart. Not only Jack called her ‘Miss Sharon’—a formal name, but also mentioned that it was his own personal affair and that Sharon as an outsider should not interfere. This statement had clearly stated his intention with her—they were impossible to be together. He really did not give her any chance at all...

“Miss Sharon, listen to every single word clearly! Wake up! He doesn’t want your help! He is giving you the cold shoulder, can’t you sense that? He doesn’t appreciate you at all, why do you still want to help him?”

Leo clapped his hand excitedly when he heard what Jack had uttered. Now that the last roadblock was finally cleared, Leo was flabbergasted with joy.

More than a dozen bodyguards who were waiting outside the center rushed into the place after hearing the exchange.

“Young Master Leo, how can we serve you?”

One of them immediately stepped forward, bowed before Leo with his hands clapped together, and said.

Chapter 737

“There’s one ignorant bastard here who clearly did not bring his brain today. I want to go home but he stopped me from doing so. You know what you should do next, right?”

Leo jeered cold-heartedly and turned to Timothy. “Young Master Drake, don’t worry about them. These bodyguards are not ordinary. They created a unique fighting technique called the Invincible Spinning Void Fist that nobody on this earth knows. Besides, all of them are seniors and juniors from the same place. They’re powerful!”

Timothy’s heart leaped for joy and his hopes soared when he heard Leo’s words. Leo was right! Although the Turner family was only a third-class family, it did not mean that there was no top-notch skilled fighter in their family.

Some skilled combatants might have emotionally tied with someone they met from a third-class family, and for this reason, perhaps, they were willing to work for them.

Looking at Leo’s self-confidence soaring high, Timothy finally thought that there were still hopes for the other party to teach Jack an unforgettable lesson. It would be best if they made him bedridden for weeks!

“Hey! How dare you offend our young master? Are you sending yourself to hell?”

A swamp of bodyguards immediately surrounded Jack.

Unfortunately, those bodyguards fell to the ground as soon as they surrounded Jack. None of them were able to get back on their feet right now. Pain sheeted through them with a terrible intensity that caused all of them to wail in agony. Their faces morphed into one of the dead blanched faces.

“What the...”

Timothy, on the other hand, had his heart hammered in his chest that his face went white. These bodyguards from the Turner family did not seem to be reliable at all now. What Invincible Spinning Void Fist? It was nothing but a cotton candy fist to Jack—soft and useless. More than a dozen men used the same technique and yet none of them could touch the corner of Jack’s clothes before plopping onto the ground.

“If I don’t see 1 billion transferred into my account, you’ll have your last breath here!”

A stoic yet terrifying smile plastered on Jack’s face. He looked at Leo and added, “Oh. By the way, if some valuable furniture or things are damaged here, you should pay for it too. After all, you started the fight, and also because you refused to pay, right?”

A sheen of cold sweat presented on Leo’s forehead, his face turned paler and paler as Jack spoke. After he gave some thoughts to the matter, he finally opened his mouth, “Aren’t there 8 more games? Let’s go on then. Hmph! I wasn’t at my best a moment ago. And perhaps I’ll win the remaining 8 games and you’ll be the one who owes me money!”

“Alright then. In that case, I’ll continue the game with you. I’d only played two rounds, after all. And I really quite like this game, it’s fun!”

Jack chuckled upon hearing Leo’s proposal. Every single word and tone from his mouth induced rage inside Leo. Leo was practically boiling with anger that he almost spew blood. What? Had this punk really never played billiards before? What a joke!

“C’mon, it’s my turn to start the game!”

Leo wiped the cold sweat on his face and neck, and then strode toward the billiard table, carefully.

Of course, everyone noticed that his hands were trembling slightly.

He was already not Jack's match in the first place, and now that he was nervous, he naturally could not perform well. Therefore, in the next eight games, he never won once.

In only one game, he saw a glimmer of hope, but in the end, he failed to take down that round.

"All right! Ten games are over, do you have anything to say now? Transfer one billion dollars! This is my account number!"

Jack took a pen and wrote his account number on a piece of paper swiftly and handed it to Leo.

"But...but I only have five hundred million in my credit balance. Mr. White, my dear Mr. White, I'll give you all five hundred million dollars, and we'll call that a deal, is that okay?"

Leo knew crystal clear in his heart that Jack was not a simple man. Such a strong person was not letting them leave, thus, he could only plead to Jack pathetically.

Chapter 738

"Jack, have you heard of the saying that goes, 'Luckiest is he who knows just when to rise and go home'?"

"Five hundred million dollars is a lot on its own, and Young Master Turner doesn't have any money on him anymore. Consider yourself lucky today, being able to wheedle five hundred million from him," came Timothy's response, though laced with arrogance as he gave Jack a crooked smile.

Jack was already unsatisfied. With how condescending Timothy had just spoken to him, he offered a tight-lipped smile in return. "No. I know if the situation was different, that I was the one who lost, he wouldn't have let me get away with a fraction less of one billion. I'd like to point out that your

negotiation skills are horrendous, too.

“Young Master Turner was the one who made the bet with me anyway. How can you say that I’m just ‘wheedling’ money out of him? You can’t blame me if he has terrible coordination!”

“Don’t overstep your boundaries, punk. This is the Turner family’s young master!”

The bodyguards, though still in pain, rose to their feet after they had been beaten. They were internally terrified of Jack’s mere presence.

Jack glared at one of the bodyguards, who was so scared that he staggered backward. “Like I care he’s the young master of whatever family,” he scoffed. “Don’t think he can walk out of this place if he doesn’t pay me in full... Even if it’s just a dollar short!”

With clenched fists, Leo turned to Timothy, realizing that Jack was not letting him off the hook. “Young Master Drake, help me pay this five hundred million, why don’t you?”

Timothy found himself stuck without a proper response before he eventually replied, “Young Master Turner, you’re asking for five hundred million, not fifty million. Even if you asked me to lend you five hundred million dollars, I would have to think carefully about it. Do you think I can lend five billion hundred million to you just like that?”

Helpless, Leo turned his anxious gaze toward Jack. “I don’t have that much money,” he blurted. “I only have five hundred million!”

Jack chuckled, amused at the situation. “I’ll make it simple for you: Give me five hundred million dollars and that stupid pig-head of yours. How about that?”

His words terrified Leo, whose face was completely drained of color.

Left with no other choice, Leo turned to one of the bodyguards with him and rambled, “Logan, go back and help me tell everyone of what’s going on. My father will have to come up with a way to get five hundred million, or else, I’d die!”

After he said that, Leo turned to Jack once again and said, “I’ll have my bodyguard return to get my father and the money! It shouldn’t be a problem, right?”

Jack nodded his head. “Of course not!”

As though undisturbed, he turned to his female companions. “Let’s play billiards. It’s pretty fun after all,” offered Jack. “We’ll play while we wait for his father, okay?”

His words did not seem to sit well with Tanya. “Are you really thinking about quitting, Jack?” she asked, her gaze fixated on him. “Don’t quit. Please don’t hold a grudge against my brother. He’s just saying stuff because he’s angry!”

Jack merely gave her a bitter smile. “Miss Tanya, I appreciate your sincerity, but I’m pretty sure that you know what kind of a person I am. I’ll never repeat what I’ve said, and I do take everything seriously. I’m not one to fool around, and you know that. Besides, I’m not quitting; your brother fired me.”

“Fine...” Tanya grumbled.

Tanya knew that it was pointless to argue with him any further; he was firm in his belief. “Then promise me that we’ll still be good friends,” she gently pleaded. “That won’t be a problem, right?”

“Naturally not. We’ll still be good friends even if I’m not a bodyguard of the Drake family!”

Jack nodded. The four of them—including Tanya, Sharon, and Yvonne—played on two tables and started

their own rounds of billiards.

...

Meanwhile, the Turner family's master was drinking tea with a marshal he knew and was on good terms with.

This marshal was from Sky City, and he was a distant relative of the Turner family. It so happened that he was their guest today.

The peaceful atmosphere was shattered when Logan, a bodyguard, barged into the room, huffing and panting.

Chapter 739

"Master, something bad has happened!" heaved Logan in between pants.

Master Turner's facial expression darkened as he glared at Logan. "What is it? You're really rude. Don't you know that you should go to the housekeeper? Don't you see that I have an important guest here?"

"Uncle, what are you talking about? Who's the important guest? We're a family; this is too generous of you," spoke a young man opposite Master Turner as he sipped his tea, a small smile on his face as he did.

Master Turner glanced at the bodyguard—Logan—and level-headedly prodded, "Speak up. What is it? Why do you need to come to me?"

Logan replied. "It's not good, Master. Young... Young Master lost quite a lot of money playing billiards with some people!"

“Lost money? How’s that possible?” Master Turner was stunned. “Isn’t he rather skilled at billiards and would win most of his games? Didn’t he tell me two days ago that he won several hundred million? Why are you so surprised that he lost today?”

Of course, Master Turner knew that his son frequented the billiard table and gambled there. He also knew that his son normally betted ten million per game with Young Master Drake.

Even if his son lost, he should not have lost much because of his skills.

“Master, the young master wagered a huge bet this time! He betted ten games with someone, and it was a hundred million per game. He lost a total of one billion!” blurted Logan, his anxiety hung over him. “Young Master only has five hundred million with him and is half a billion short. He can’t leave, and that person said that if the young master can’t come up with the remaining five hundred million, he’ll kill him. Young Master had no other choice, so he asked me to come back and get the money!”

“What?!” Master Turner instantly shot up from his seat, bewildered and in disbelief with what Logan had just told him. “He betted one hundred million a game with someone and lost all ten games? Are you joking?! He lost ten games with his skills? Also, what’s in his mind to have betted one hundred million a game with people?”

One hundred million was quite a huge amount for the Turner family. They were a third-class aristocratic family and did not have much working capital, although they had many properties.

Apart from that, he knew his son very well. His son would not bet on billiard games with others if he was not sure it would turn out in his favor. At the very least, he would not bet one hundred million on a game.

Logan then offered his explanation as he spoke, “Master, I suspect that the other person made a fool out of our young master. That person said that he didn’t know how to play, and that it was his first time playing billiards. Young Master must’ve wanted to win his money, so he agitated that person to play with him. The person was pretentious and said that he wants to bet one hundred million for a game. Young Master was confident, so he agreed to it, but it wasn’t expected that the man would be exceptionally good at billiards. He said that he had already mastered it after looking at the young master

and Young Master Drake playing one game. In the end, he won ten games continuously!”

“Damn. How dare he tricked my son?!” Fabian Turner was extremely angry as he balled his fists tightly. “Right. Who’s this person? Is he rich and powerful? Someone willing to bet one hundred million a game must be a powerful man!”

“Master, that person is just a bodyguard from the Drake family, and his name is Jack! Young Master Drake even spoke on the young master’s behalf, but that guy didn’t even listen to him. Young Master Drake was so angry that he sacked this bodyguard on the spot!” came Logan’s reply, obviously angry as he spoke. “We wanted to escort our young master and leave that place, but we were not that guy’s opponent. He’s really good at fighting!”

Chapter 740

“How dare he trick my son?!” Furious, Fabian’s fists tightened. “No one dared to even intervene. He was the Drake family’s bodyguard, after all. How dare this guy still act so arrogantly after he’s been sacked by the Drake family!”

Logan frowned and said, “This guy is out of his mind. He even disregarded Young Master Drake’s plea for the young master’s behalf. Young Master Drake asked Jack to give him face and just take five hundred million from our young master, but this idiot refused!”

“So there’s such a person like this who doesn’t understand the world, huh?” The young man who sat with Fabian stood up. “Who’s this person? For a bodyguard, the man has quite a temper. Moreover, isn’t he afraid that the Drake family will deal with him now that he’s offended Young Master Drake?”

With a bitter smile on his face, Fabian responded, “Oh you have no idea, my nephew. This guy is Jack White, the son-in-law who married into the Taylor family. He’s also a retired soldier like you, but it seems that he failed to obtain any title within these five years. He told everybody that he had a token but had lost it on the way back home, so there’s no proof. There are rumors that he’s just a head commander!”

Logan then piped in, “Who knows if he really is a head commander. Everybody thinks that he wasn’t

lying when he claimed to be that, as he's quite skillful. Nonetheless, this guy really has very good medical skills as he had saved the Goddess of War Lana before. The Goddess of War had already repaid him, though. The reason he's so crazy might be because he still thinks that the Goddess of War owes him her life, and nobody dares offend him because of that!"

Fabian touched the tip of his nose. "This is so troublesome. We can't kill this guy since he's done quite the favor for the Goddess of War. What if she comes for us if anything happens to him?"

The young man smiled coldly. "But we can't really pay him one billion, right? Wouldn't that make us cowardly in his eyes?" The man then fell into his thoughts before he offered, "I have an idea, Uncle. I'll follow you there, and we'll just pay him five hundred million. If he insists on getting paid a billion dollars, I'll show him who's boss and burst his bubble. He needs to understand that there are masters better than him!"

Fabian's eyes lit up when he heard his suggestion; this was what he wanted. He wanted this relative of his to take action, but he was afraid his nephew—now an honorable marshal—would turn him down.

It was music to Fabian's ears when his nephew mentioned it himself that he would tag along, without him begging.

"Great! It's definitely wonderful to have you on our side." Fabian nodded, pleased at this. "I don't think the other bodyguards need to come with us as they'll be useless there." They soon left in their car—with Logan as the driver—and headed for the mall.

...

"Why aren't they here yet?" Leo grew increasingly depressed when he observed Jack improving continuously as he played with his female companions.

It was one whole billion. What could he do about it?

He wondered if his father would be angry when he heard about his bet gone wrong.

He felt that Jack had been lying to him since the beginning. Jack might have been a master at billiards but purposely acted as if he knew nothing. How could he have improved so quickly if that was not the case?

Leo was lost in his anxiety and fretting when Fabian walked into the billiard hall with the marshal and their bodyguard, Logan.

“Father, why... Why did you only bring two people here?” Leo’s facial expression darkened when he saw his father coming over with only two people. It seemed that his father had compromised and paid Jack the money. He had hoped his father would put up a fight and bring more bodyguards to beat Jack up. No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 741-745

Chapter 741

Fabian scanned the room, and once he saw his son, he snapped, “Who’s Jack? How dare you keep my son from leaving?”

Jack was unruffled when he saw the new company walking toward them as he potted another ball. He gently placed the cue stick on the table and said, “You’re the head of the Turner family, yes? Your son lost one billion in our game of billiards, and he only has half a billion with him. He’s lost the game and, well, losers need to pay. I won’t let him leave unless he comes up with the remaining money he owes me.”

“Young man, don’t you think you’re going overboard for betting one hundred million a game?” Fabian had a condescending smirk on his face as he added, “Apart from that, you were the one who lied to my son that you didn’t know how to play billiards, and he wagered quite an impressive amount because of that. Are you sure you deserve one whole billion?”

Jack merely shrugged. “Master Turner, I hope you can assess the situation before saying something. I

didn't lie to your son or trick him into playing with me; I really have just learnt how to play. Apart from that, your son was the one who wanted to win money from me, so he instigated the competition between us." Jack paused before he added, "If he didn't intend to win money from me, how could he possibly lose the game?"

At this moment, the young man beside Fabian stepped forward and said, "Uncle, ignore this sharp-tongued guy. We should stop speaking with him. Let's give him half a billion if he wants it so badly. We'll still leave with Young Master Turner if he doesn't want it."

Fabian nodded. "Hmm. You've got a point, Cadmus Sanders," he spoke. "We can't treat this person with such regards."

A surge of relief washed over Leo when he heard the young man's name. "Brother Cadmus? You're Brother Cadmus? Dear me! I didn't recognize you as it's been years since we last met. I heard that you joined the army and received an honorary title. You're a marshal, right? When did you arrive?"

Cadmus smiled. "It's been a long time, Brother. I've just been at your house less than an hour ago and had no idea we'd meet under such circumstances." He paused for a while before he assured, "Don't you worry. Your Brother Cadmus is here, and it's considered giving him face that we give him half a billion. After all, we're not bullying him because we are stronger. He's delusional if he still wants a billion!"

"A marshal!" chirped Jack with a smile after he heard this. "No wonder you're so confident. You're a marshal!"

Timothy smiled at Cadmus and said, "I've no idea that Young Master Sanders is actually a marshal. I envy you for having this title at such a young age!" He glanced at Jack in disdain. "You're much better than a specific someone in this room. He's so arrogant as a head commander, and he offered me no shred of respect!"

Cadmus was happy when he heard this. With a grin, he spoke to Timothy, "This must be Young Master Drake, the Drake family's eldest young master. You look very striking. Let's have some drinks once I settle the matter here."

“Alright! I’ll pay for our drinks. After all, this Eastfield, and I should show my hospitality as your host!” Timothy chuckled, obviously pleased. His father and sister spent so much money to cling onto Jack, though he was a mere head commander.

Timothy believed he was the better one as he was establishing a connection with someone of better status; a marshal, much more reliable than Jack.

Chapter 742

Fabian liked what he heard from Timothy, and a pleased grin was plastered on his face as he said, “Young Master Drake, you’re being too gracious. I should be the one to show you hospitality as thanks. I heard that you’ve fired this bodyguard for my son? How should I repay your kindness?”

Fed up with how these men were acting, Jack snapped, “Who’s hosting who later has nothing to do with me. You should transfer the promised one billion to me before I lose my patience.”

Cadmus was taken aback momentarily at Jack’s boldness, but it soon disappeared as he smirked. “Young man, you’re quite the talker. How dare you speak to us like that after you know that I’m a marshal?”

Jack laughed haughtily. “Why should I be courteous to a marshal who can’t tell right from wrong? And you’re just a marshal. You’re not worthy of me treating you courteously.”

“Dear me, you’re extremely hard-headed!” Cadmus balled his fists tightly and smirked. “If that’s the case, let’s see if your head is harder than my fists!”

He immediately stepped forward and rushed toward Jack, his first aimed right at him.

Jack’s smirk dropped from his face when he saw the man charging right at him. Scoffing, Jack clenched his fists tightly and aimed one right for Cadmus.

Cadmus was startled when Jack was not even attempting to dodge. 'He's not evading my attack?!' Of course, his surprise did not last long before his smirk returned. Cadmus was not backing down either as he continued to charge at Jack.

Their fists collided against one another, and the sheer power that came from both fists emitted a powerful force that was audible for all to hear.

"What?" Cadmus could feel the horrifying force behind Jack's punch as their fists met. With eyes and mouth wide open in surprise, the force sent him staggering backward a few steps before he could regain his footing.

Everybody was surprised when they saw Jack standing there, still rooted, unmoved. On the other hand, Cadmus moved several steps backward after their impact.

"Impossible!" Cadmus shook his head in disbelief. A mere head commander would not have such power.

Not giving up, he charged once more toward Jack, almost using all his power this time.

However, Jack also increased his power and once again caused Cadmus to move several steps backward. This time, Cadmus could not even stand as he fell straight to the floor.

"How... How is this possible? Isn't he a head commander?!" Leo was stunned, with eyes and mouth widened like saucers.

"Amazing...!" Sharon looked at Jack's figure with starry-eyes.

Chapter 743

Tanya, who stood at the sidelines, could only sigh. She, her father, and Spectre had seen how scary Jack

was, and could be. After all, Jack had slain 300 people from the Eagle Clan on his own.

It still sent shivers down her spine when she recalled what happened that one fateful night: She saw a master that only appeared in the novels. That was also the day she saw somebody killing their enemies without any hesitation.

She was familiar with Spectre's strength, and it was a huge difference when compared to Jack's.

Her father had already reminded her brother to not offend Jack, that they should always be in his good books, but her brother had thoughtlessly fired Jack just a while ago. This was a huge loss for the Drake family. She really hoped that Jack would not hold a grudge because of this.

"You... You're no head commander, not with that fighting power of yours! Who are you? What's your title?" Marshal Cadmus was the most surprised among all. He was very confident with his own strength, but Jack's power was stronger than his even when he used all his power to attack Jack.

Cadmus did not want to use his ultimate skill. He had a feeling that this person in front of him was not someone he could win against.

Jack shrugged his shoulders. "Who am I? I'm just a son-in-law married into the Taylor family. I'm just a stinky soldier like what Young Master Leo said, no? He only needed to pay me half a billion and apologize to me sincerely... But since he's called me a stinky soldier, well, that soured my mood!" Pausing momentarily, he then added with emphasis on every word, "Due to that, I won't accept any amount less than one billion!"

Cadmus's facial expression darkened when he heard Jack's explanation. He turned around and looked at Leo coldly. "Brother, what did you say? A stinky soldier? We soldiers who sacrifice our lives for Daxia are such lowly people in your eyes?"

"Brother, I... I didn't mean you! You're a marshal! I meant Jack!" Leo immediately lowered his head and explained embarrassingly.

Instead of going after Jack, Cadmus turned to smack Leo with all his might. “This slap is for all the soldiers who died on the battlefield. If you dare say such words of looking down at us veterans, don’t blame me for being ruthless!”

“Brother, I...I’m sorry!” Leo felt wronged. He raised his head and wanted to argue with Cadmus, but he immediately cowered when he saw Cadmus’s terrifying expression.

“Cadmus, why...” Fabian looked at Cadmus and was speechless. It did not matter that his son lost the games. His boy called Jack was a stinky soldier. It made sense to him now why this man refused to give Young Master Drake face and insisted on getting one billion from his son!

“Uncle, I can’t help you on this. It’s best if you guys settle it on your own.” Cadmus walked over to the other side, took out his cigarette, and started smoking by himself.

He had gone through lots of life and death situations to achieve the title he had today, but not without the sight of many of his brothers dying in the hands of their enemies. It was because of this that he could not tolerate it if anyone called veterans ‘stinky and useless’ soldiers.

In his opinion, the comfortable lives these people were enjoying had been exchanged by the blood of these soldiers. They could not be looked down on. The soldiers that have fallen in battle would be aggrieved had they heard such words from the living.

Fabian was speechless. He could only smile at Jack and admit defeat. “Young Jack, what happened today is definitely my son’s mistake, and I apologize to you. However, one billion is too much, and we’re just a third-class aristocratic family. It’ll be a huge pressure for us to come up with one billion. Can we agree at the amount of eight hundred million?”

Jack smiled coldly after he heard this. “I don’t want to repeat myself. One billion, not a penny less. If not, I will kill both you and your son. I believe that this Marshal Cadmus wouldn’t be able to stop me!”

Everybody was once again surprised. Anyone inferior to the other would not claim such bold things, after all.

The man in front of them was just a normal son-in-law who married into the wife's family, right? Was he not just a head commander?

Chapter 744

Cadmus was standing right in front of Jack, yet Jack could boldly claim that he—a marshal—would not be able to stop him. If that was the case, he was really domineering.

He would not have dared say something like this if he did not at least have the strength of a marshal or a King of War!

"This..." Not wanting to pay Jack one billion, Fabian turned his gaze toward Cadmus. After all, what Jack had so boldly claimed was rather condescending for Cadmus.

He had hoped Cadmus would get angry from Jack's choice of words; Fabian believed Cadmus could win against Jack if he used everything he got.

However, Cadmus merely ignored him and turned his line of sight away.

Tongue-tied, Fabian turned to his poor excuse of a son and snapped, "I'll pay the five hundred million for you, but you have to pay the rest by yourself!"

"Alright, father..." Leo had a bitter expression on his face and felt it was unfair for him to be in this situation. However, he could not do anything about the situation. After all, even a marshal failed to topple Jack. What else could he do?

He immediately transferred the money to Jack's bank account. He then told Fabian Jack's account

number and asked him to transfer the remaining amount.

Fabian was utterly devastated when a huge amount of money left his bank account. The 500 million from Leo's side were won from other games, so he did not feel much. However, this 500 million was from his own family. To a third-class aristocratic family, this money meant that they had to reduce their expenses for the time being.

Finally, Fabian looked at Jack and asked. "Alright, Jack. Can we leave no?"

"Sure." Jack nodded. "Since you've paid the money, I have no need for you guys anymore."

Fabian waved his hand at Jack with a gloomy expression. "We'll meet again."

He then turned around to address Timothy, Leo and their group of friends. "Young Master Drake, young masters, come with me. Allow me to host you, as you're all friends of my son."

"Alright." Despite his answer, Timothy had a darkened expression on his face. He eyed Jack for a good while before walking out with Fabian and the others.

...

He was still in a trance when they exited the mall. Was Jack not a head commander? How was it possible that even Marshal Cadmus could not best him?

Was it possible that his father's assumption was right? Was he a King of War who did not want to expose his true identity?

He began to regret his actions as he walked outside. If Jack truly was a King of War, firing Jack would surely anger his father.

Chapter 745

Unable to hold back his questions, Leo eventually asked, "Marshal Cadmus, is Jack really that strong, or did you choose to surrender? You must have some really powerful boxing moves that you haven't used, right?"

"I don't believe you'd be defeated if you used your full force back there. The guy doesn't have anything but some measly strength, right?"

"This person's strength is unpredictable. I'm not certain that I can win if I really fight with him." Cadmus glanced at the second floor, where the billiard hall was. He started smoking his cigarette again and added, "I get him, though. I understand his behavior and why he did it after cousin Leo spoke in such a degrading manner about soldiers and veterans!"

"You! How dare you agree to a hundred million on each game? Why didn't you think about why he easily agrees to such a risky yet high-yielding gamble? Did you even think about the consequences if you lose the games?!" Fabian gritted his teeth and looked at his son in disappointment.

Leo spoke in a defeated manner, "I did think about it. I thought that he was frightening me on purpose and thought that I wouldn't agree to his suggestion. Apart from that, I had no idea that I'd lose ten games consecutively. With my skills, it would've been difficult for him to even win five games from me. I thought the money I had was more than enough, but who would've thought..."

"Nevermind. This guy is highly skilled and is someone we can't afford to offend. Let's just consider it a bad day for us."

Fabian sighed and looked at Young Master Drake. "Young Master Drake, this bodyguard of yours is really strong," he spoke, and his surprise was laced with his words. "I never thought he'd be that frightening! However, I also didn't know that you'd be such a loyal person to your friends. You fired such a strong bodyguard for my son!"

The corners of Timothy's mouth twitched. Why would he fire Jack if he knew how strong he was?

Timothy could only force himself to smile at this situation. "What should I say... I'm an extremely loyal person to my friends, and I have a good relationship with Young Master Leo. How can I choose my bodyguard over him? Jack is very strong, but he still disrespected me and talked back at me. I have my fair share of distaste toward that man for quite some time now."

In order to prove that what he said was correct, he even added, "Not only does he seldom come to work, but he's often late to work, too! Apart from that, he's constantly with my sister and Yvonne, though he's much closer to my sister. Hmph! I think he's not working for work, if you know what I mean. He's there for my sister, I bet!"

"Really? You need to be careful of people like this. Firing him is a good choice!"

Leo immediately agreed to what they said. "Jack is a son-in-law who married into the Taylor family. How shameful is it for a man to marry into their wife's family? To me, he's just a weakling, and he's a married man too. How dare he go after Miss Tanya? Which part of him looks worthy of your sister?"

"That's right, that's right!" said one of Leo's friends. "This guy is craving for something he can't get. Why doesn't he look at himself in the mirror? He's not worthy of being with your sister!"

"Well, I don't know what to do about that. After all, my sister is a woman, and women like flirtatious men. Jack might've buttered her up, even. That would explain why she's so adamant in standing with Jack," came Timothy's reply.

"Yes, this guy must be very flirtatious. Otherwise, why would Miss Sharon side with him too? I think that she had been blinded by him so she would fall for someone like that! He's just a dumb teenager, a reckless man!" Leo nodded. He had been extremely unhappy about this since the beginning.

He thought of himself a rather handsome man. It would make his day if Miss Sharon fell for him, or if Young Master Drake set him and his sister—Tanya—up.

He never thought both beautiful, gorgeous women would fall for a soldier who married into his wife's family. That in itself was a big blow to Leo.No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 746-750

Chapter 746

After Timothy and the rest left the hall, Jack turned to the girls and said, "We should get going now. Though I'm fired, we're all still friends. Let me send you guys home."

"Jack, my brother spoke out of anger just now. You really want to quit just like that?" Reluctant Tanya continued to persuade Jack, even though he made himself clear moments ago.

Yvonne, her cousin, was just as reluctant. "Jack, you need to think about it clearly. It's very hard to find a job with a monthly salary of twenty million!" Although this guy annoyed her from time to time, it would have disheartened her to watch him leave.

"I won't regret anything once my mind's made up!" Jack laughed. "On top of that, didn't I just win one billion from the few rounds of billiards? I need to work for several years before I can earn one billion, right?"

There was nothing Tanya and the rest could say once Jack made his decision.

Though, Sharon's eyes seemingly glimmered. "Jack, now that you don't have a job... Why don't you work as a bodyguard for my family? I can give you a monthly salary of fifty million. You don't need to do anything apart from accompanying me and talking to me every day. How does that sound?"

Tanya and Yvonne internally facepalmed; Sharon's intentions were too obvious. She did not want Jack to work there. She wanted to be with him so that they would have time to build a relationship.

“You?” Jack was stunned and poked her forehead with his finger. “I wouldn’t work for you even if it’s a monthly salary of a hundred million. It’d be downright dangerous if I do. That’s like sending a lamb into a tiger’s den!”

“What do you mean, ‘sending a lamb into a tiger’s den’? You’re saying this as though I’m a pervert!” Sharon pursed her dainty mouth, flabbergasted at Jack’s choice of words.

“Let’s head back, I need to come home early.” Jack smiled and continued saying, “I earned one billion today. It should be enough to hold a birthday party for my wife, right?”

Tanya and the others were speechless. This man bagged a billion just like that

The people from the Turner family must be extremely angry right now.

...

After he had sent the ladies home, Jack made his way home.

Tanya, upon entering her residence, immediately went looking for James after Jack left.

James was having a chat with Spectre and the other masters of the Drake family when Tanya approached him. “Oh. Didn’t you just leave with the rest for some leisure time? You’re back quite early!” asked Drake with a grin on his face.

“Father... I’m so angry! Timothy is really getting on my nerves!”

Chapter 747

Tanya sat down with a frown on her face.

“Did that fool gamble in billiards again?” The smile on James’s face immediately disappeared and was replaced with a scowl. His son became increasingly unreliable as of late. Timothy had been messing around with Young Master Leo and was neglecting his work.

“I don’t care how many billiards games he wants to bet on. We went out with Jack to enjoy billiards today, but Young Master Leo stirred trouble with us. Not only did Timothy refuse to stand on Jack’s side, but he even fired Jack despite my persuasion and warning! Now that Jack’s gone, it’s almost certain he won’t be coming back!” Tanya seethed in rage as she spoke, though her readily lovable face made her look cute even as she was angry.

“Fired?” James’ face darkened when he heard this. “What happened? Why did this idiot fire Jack? Tell me everything.”

Tanya nodded and told her father, James everything that had happened.

James pounded the table angrily. “That rascal! I told him so many times that Jack’s more than just a regular soldier, that he’s at least a King of War. Told him it’d be best for us to be in his good graces...! Now I’m mad at him for firing Jack!”

“Agreed, Father. Master Turner brought a marshal with him to challenge Jack, but they eventually conceded defeat when they discovered the marshal was no match for Jack. In the end, they had to pay Jack a billion dollars!”

“If even a marshal is no match for Jack, he’s definitely a King of War. I wonder how many stars he has!” Spectre sighed with a frown on his face. “Jack is someone who holds himself with dignity and doesn’t go against his own words. Now that Young Master Timothy fired him, it’s impossible to ask him to return!”

“What was our young master thinking when he sided with Leo Turner? That’s not a good person!” said another middle-aged man with a frown. “Still, I’m sure Jack is a generous person and won’t hold grudges against such a small issue. It’s a big loss for us that we’ve fired such a great fighter!”

“Jack is one-of-a-kind. Nobody knew what he’s really made of as he kept his identity and power hidden. We all thought that he was just a head commander!” Another elder started smiling bitterly. “Surely Timothy wouldn’t have fired him if the fight took place first. Safe to say, our young master must’ve thought Jack was all bark but no bite before he could witness his power.”

James’ expression darkened. “Talking about this right now doesn’t benefit us! There are lots of people out there that like to stay low-key!” He recalled something and asked, “Do you know why the Taylor family was requested years ago to send a young man to join the army?”

The elderly man frowned. “I’m not very clear about what happened back then, but what I do know is that the Taylor family was requested to send a young man older than eighteen to join the military.

“At that time, everybody knew that only Ivan Taylor met this requirement!” The elder smiled bitterly. “Nobody knew Old Master Taylor could be such a calculative man. He found Jack and married him to Selena. With that done, this son-in-law joined the ranks in Ivan’s stead as he met the requirements as well.”

James nodded. “That’s right. Everybody knew how dangerous the situation was. It was a life-and-death matter, and young masters like Ivan Taylor weren’t suited to be in that situation. Ivan wouldn’t have survived any battles if he was the one enlisted.

“Old Master Taylor is so smart to have come up with that idea, but he never thought Ms. Selena would sleep with Jack on the night of their wedding, and that Jack would return alive five years later!”

An elder then recalled something and asked, “Why was the Taylor family appointed a position in the beginning? It’s uncommon for this to happen! Was it possible that they offended someone powerful?”

Chapter 748

James nodded at the elder and explained, “Years ago, Ivan crossed paths with a girl that came with several other youngsters, and they were all on a trip. Ivan, seeing the girl’s beauty, wanted to take

advantage of her so he touched her. As a result, the group of young men gave Ivan a beating before they left." James paused here before continuing, "Before they left, however, they asked for Ivan's name and background check. They warned that Ivan should be prepared for his death, as they were people Ivan could not risk to offend!"

Spectre could not hide his surprise when he heard this and blurted, "Who are they? They're that powerful that they can appoint a certain person during army recruitment?"

Tanya also looked at her father and was obviously interested in this matter. They only heard news that the Taylor family offended somebody and the recruiters appointed this requirement to them.

Luckily, the group of people did not specifically mention names. Otherwise, Old Master Taylor would not have the chance to work his way around it.

James continued saying, "I'm not very sure about the exact situation, but I do know that they're from Gin City. There are ten major families there, all downright frightening. They hold most of the properties and power in Daxia and have been in existence for a long time now. Their power is infinite!"

"No wonder!" Spectre spoke in sudden realization. "It might be easy to settle the issue if Ivan offended people from other places, since it'd be resolved easily with money. Tough luck that Ivan offended people from Gin City."

The elder said, "This punishment was considered acceptable. They only appointed a position to the Taylor family and didn't send a team to wipe out the entire family. That was quite merciful on their side!"

Tanya thought about it and replied, "Luckily, we're quite far away from Gin City. That group of people must have appointed a position to the Taylor family but didn't bother to follow up about the matter. If they knew that the Taylor family found a son-in-law who married into their family to replace Ivan, they might have continued causing trouble for the Taylor family!"

James smiled bitterly. "No matter what, these people requested someone from the younger members of the Taylor family who's older than eighteen years old. Jack, though a mere son-in-law, can be considered as a member of the Taylor family as he fulfills the requirement. Jack surely fitted the bill."

Spectre replied with a smile, "The title of a son-in-law married into the wife's family is unique. He can be a Taylor family member if they forcefully say that. If they don't, he can only be considered a half a Taylor family member!"

"Whatever it is, this matter happened five years ago. Those youngsters might've forgotten this since long ago."

"They might even think that Ivan had died on the battlefield. It's been five years, so I don't think they will continue pursuing this matter," James continued. "Luckily, we're quite far away from Gin City, and not many of its people would come and visit this place. Under normal circumstances, let's just earn our money and live our lives peacefully!"

Tanya was deep in thoughts before she asked James, "Did the Taylor family offend one of the ten major families from Gin City? That'd be a real disaster!"

James smiled bitterly. "I don't know about the details, though I do know that they offended somebody from Gin City. Nobody knows if it's one of the ten major families," he spoke, followed with a sigh. "I'll give your brother a serious punishment tonight. Since he's not focused on his work, I'll hand the South City Group matters to you!"

Chapter 749

"Me?" Tanya frowned when James expressed that he wanted her to manage a big project. "How's that possible? Father, I won't be able to enjoy myself anymore if I take this up. I'm still young! It's best to leave this to Timothy!"

"Leave it to him?" scoffed James. "Our family would crumble within days if he continues to lose money on billiards games. I seldom take much notice on these things, but I checked our company's accounts several days ago and noted that several of our companies have been losing money for these months.

“Some of the projects are put on hold because your brother didn’t sign the documents on time, and we’ve been paying penalties because we can’t finish the projects within the time limit! We’ve been losing money!”

Tanya was furious when she heard this. “How’s that possible? If that’s the case, Timothy has gone overboard!” She finally realized that her brother was really out of hand and that he was not just messing around.

Tanya, with a frown, then said, “But Father, South City Group is one of our family’s biggest groups. Timothy would surely be upset if you pass it to me!”

“Hmph!” came the disgruntled noise from James. “Why do I need to care about his happiness? We can’t let him ruin the entire Drake family’s business, can we? I’ve made my observation. Although you like to shop, you’ve managed the small businesses I handed to you well, and you’ve managed to earn quite some money within this year. You’ve my daughter, and I can’t side with Timothy just because he’s my son!”

Spectre also nodded. “This is how the world works; the capable ones are to be crowned. If Miss Tanya is really talented, you should be appreciated. After all, the Drake family is rich, but we’d be surpassed by other powerful families in just a few years if we’re badly managed. That’ll be disastrous!”

“Yes!” Everyone else nodded in agreement.

“It’s... It’s alright if that’s the case!” Tanya was speechless. Although she did not want to compete with her own brother, she was really worried about Timothy’s current situation.

Apart from that, what her father said made sense. South City Group had always been earning money and seldom had any losses. They could not pretend like nothing happened when such a big group that had already been on the right track were experiencing losses.

...

At this moment, Jack had already reached home.

“Hey, why are you back home so soon? You’re back so early!” Fiona spoke happily when she saw that Jack had returned. “It’s best if you don’t leave work early every day. After all, you’re working for them, and it’s best if you go to work and leave work on time! I fear Miss Tanya would be displeased if you do this often.”

Jack smiled bitterly when he heard this. “Miss Tanya wouldn’t be unhappy, but Young Master Drake is. He fired me today, so that’s why I came back earlier.”

Chapter 750

“Oh, you’ve been fired by Young Master Drake!” Fiona said with a smile before she suddenly snapped at the realization, “What?! You’ve been fired? You said you’re fired? Is something wrong? They fired you for real?”

“What’s going on? Why are you yelling about?” Andrew asked as he walked out from the house to go on a walk.

Jack... He... He said that he’s fired. Listen to him! He’s been fired from a job that has a monthly income of twenty million!” Fiona stomped her leg in anger and was extremely frustrated.

“What?!” Andrew was also surprised when he heard this. “Jack, are you joking? Are you lying to us? How can you be fired so suddenly?” He was stunned at this moment. “This doesn’t sound right. How can you be fired? Don’t you have a good relationship with the Drakes? Didn’t Miss Tanya speak kindly on your behalf? Why did Young Master Drake fire you? Is the situation really impossible to salvage?”

Fiona was just as bewildered and questioned what actually went down. “I don’t think so. Didn’t you say that you helped Miss Tanya fight off gangsters?”

“Miss Tanya and James wouldn’t fire me. Miss Tanya spoke on my behalf, too!” Jack laughed before continuing, “However, what Young Master Drake said caused me to not want to work for them!”

“What actually happened?” Andrew grew anxious at the fact that Jack had lost a job with such a high income. What should they do? After all, Jack had less than 100 million with him.

Their family had employed helpers and a dozen bodyguards. Selena’s one million monthly salary was definitely not enough.

Of course, Fiona had quite the amount of money with her, but did Jack not promise her daughter a city-stirring birthday party? The advertisements were already done, too. What should they do if they did not have enough money? Were they going to use her money?

“This is what went down. I went to play billiards with Tanya and the others, and I ended up offending Leo Turner. He had a good relationship with Young Master Drake. He wagered a hefty bet against me in a few rounds of billiards, which he lost ten rounds. He was supposed to pay me, but he didn’t have enough with him. Young Master Drake helped speak on Leo’s behalf but I disagreed with them. Young Master Drake said that I didn’t spare or give him face, so he scolded me and said that he wanted to fire me!

“Since he’s already said that he’s going to fire me, why do I need to stay there? I’m not so shameless.” Jack smiled indifferently after he spoke. He took out a cigarette, lit it up and inhaled.

“You! Are you trying to kill us?!” Fiona was extremely angry. “It’s only natural that Young Master Drake would get angry when he helped speak on behalf of his friend and you refuse to give him face! His friend merely owed you a little bit of money, so why did you insist on asking for it? Just don’t take that person’s money if he doesn’t have enough. Why are you so stupid that you didn’t spare Young Master Drake his dignity?”

“That’s right. I didn’t think you’d be this much of a fool. It’s just a bet; how much can you lose from that? Even if that person lost ten consecutive games, it’s not a lot of money. You have a monthly salary of

twenty million, too!” Andrew slapped his thigh in anger.

Two of Jack’s female bodyguards frowned when they overheard this conversation.

Unable to hold her peace, one of them walked toward Fiona and Andrew. “Uncle, Auntie, I can’t stand it when the other party says these kinds of things about our master. Since they’ve fired him, how can he continue to work as their bodyguards shamelessly?”

The other bodyguard also stepped forward and said, “That’s right! It’s their luck that our master had worked as their bodyguard. How dare they fire him?! They’re too much!” No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 751-755

Chapter 751

Andrew and Fiona were speechless. They wondered if these two women—these female bodyguards—had something going with Jack under their noses since they always stood for Jack and supported him. How could he stop working a job with a monthly salary of 20 million? Apart from that, how could these women say that the richest man was lucky to have Jack work as their family’s bodyguard?

Jack smiled bitterly and said to Fiona, “Mother, I betted one hundred million a game with Young Master Turner, and I won ten games back to back. Are you sure you don’t want this money?”

“We surely—” Fiona was about to say ‘no’ before realization dawned on her. “What?! One hundred million a game, you say? And you won ten games? Doesn’t that mean you’ve won a whole one billion?!”

“Yes, one billion,” came Jack’s calm-sounding reply, added with a shrug. “Do you feel that I should give it up just because Young Master Drake spoke up on his behalf?”

“One billion!” Andrew also exclaimed. This...this was too much! How did they settle with such large wagers?!

“That;s a lot! I thought it’d be around a hundred dollars bet per game, and at most, a thousand dollars. How did it come to a billion?! We must take the money! We can’t give up such a big amount!” Fiona grew increasingly excited when she thought about it.

She walked forward happily and patted Jack’s shoulder while saying, “Dear me! It’s all a misunderstanding. It’s alright to give up the job if it’s one billion dollars. This one billion is enough for us, and if we’re frugal, we don’t need to worry for the rest of our lives. One whole billion! Jack, you’ve made a really intelligent choice!”

“That’s right! How can we give up a billion dollars?” Andrew was just as elated as his wife, and he asked, “Have you received the money?”

“Don’t you worry. The money is safe and sound in my bank!” Jack said with a smile.

“Alright, the two of you bodyguards better follow me out later. I’ll go buy some ingredients, and we’ll cook a table full of dishes to celebrate!” Overwhelmed with excitement, Fiona went and patted Jack’s shoulders with both hands. “Jack, I’ll reward you with a table full of dishes tonight. You’ve worked hard these past days!”

Jack thought about it and purposely brought the matter up once more as he spoke, “Umm... Mother, this job is really gone!”

“Hey, it’s fine to let it go. We can start a big company with this one billion. Why are we afraid? Let’s just be our own boss!” Fiona soon left with both bodyguards forthrightly.

“You’re really one-of-a-kind. Why didn’t you tell us about this right off the bat? You’ve frightened your mother and I!” Andrew said with a smile after Fiona left.

“Frankly speaking, Father, to be honest, I wouldn’t continue working as a bodyguard for the Drakes after I’m fired,” said Jack, “even if I don’t get this one billion. After all, I’m not such a shameless person!” Jack

laughed and added, "It's not about the amount of money; it's about the dignity as a person."

Andrew was embarrassed when he heard this. He opened his mouth but did not know what to say as; Jack was right.

Chapter 752

Timothy was already drunk, and coincidentally, it was at the period when Selena would finish working and leave her office.

With his mood soured, he drank to his heart's content with Leo and the others before he got ready to go home.

As they were drunk, Leo asked one of his bodyguards to send Timothy home.

However, Timothy asked the driver to stop the car when they passed by Drake Dynasty Real Estate.

The Turner family's bodyguard turned around and asked Timothy with a frown, "What is it? Do you feel like vomiting, Young Master Drake?"

"No, I need to go down. I've got something to do! F*ck, I'm getting heated just thinking about it. He's just a bodyguard! How dare he refuse to give me face?" Young Master Drake smirked, got down from the car, and spoke to the bodyguard, "Wait for me here, I'll be back soon."

"Yes, Young Master Drake." The man nodded.

Timothy soon entered the office, rather tipsy with the aftermath of the win he had.

"Young Master Drake, why are you here?"

“Young Master Drake, good day to you!”

Most of the company’s employees looked at him in surprise when they saw Timothy, even more so when they noted he was drunk.

“I’m here to take a look at how you guys are doing recently!” Timothy laughed and walked toward the purchasing department.

“Is she here?” Soon, he arrived at Selena’s office door. With that smirk still on his face, he opened the door, entered the office, and locked it.

“Why is Young Master Drake here? Why does he stink of wine?” The purchasing department’s employee, Felicia, asked her supervisor, Sonia with a frown.

Sonia smiled coldly and lowered her voice as she said, “Isn’t it obvious? I had a weird feeling for so long now. Why did they refuse to promote me to a manager and suddenly employed Selena Taylor to work as the manager here? Apart from that, the Drake family still treats her husband so nicely.” Sonia held her hands in front of her chest and said peculiarly, “Do you know why? Selena must be secretly involved with Young Master Drake. They must’ve done what they did in private previously. Today, the young master is obviously drunk and is horny. I’m sure he’s here to look for her in the office.”

“Tsk, tsk! If that’s the case, isn’t Young Master Drake slightly too eager? Selena will finish work in thirty minutes. Can’t he wait a little longer? Isn’t it better to wait for her to finish work and meet in the hotel?” asked Felicia.

“Hey, you don’t understand men. Some men get extremely excited after they have drinks. Who knows, he’s probably looking to try something new at a new setting!” Sonia explained.

...

“Young Master Drake, why are you here? Can I help you?”

Chapter 753

Selena frowned when she saw Timothy entering her office without prior announcement. Her guard was up when she realized he reeked of alcohol and even locked the door. She immediately stood up and walked out from behind her desk.

“Don’t be nervous!” Timothy laughed and sized up Selena under the influence of alcohol.

He always thought that Selena was utterly beautiful, but he was not interested as she was married and older than him.

In his drunken state, however, he felt giddy as he eyed how the formal dress on this woman accentuated her beautiful figure.

He took just a few steps toward Selena and said, “I just so happened to pass this place on my way home, so I’m here to take a look. I’d like to know what’s the development of South Hill Real Estate’s project. By the way, I heard that you’ve appointed the Taylor family to supply eighty percent of the project material?”

The corners of Selena’s mouth twitched when she heard this. She had been worried about how people would gossip about this behind her back.

Still, many days had passed without anybody saying anything. After all, the general manager had agreed to this and signed the agreement. Even he felt that the materials from the Taylor family were rather good.

Selena eventually relaxed. Regardless, the general manager had already mentioned this to James Drake and Miss Tanya; Timothy should have known about this much earlier.

She did not know why Timothy brought up this matter.

Selena smiled embarrassingly. "Yes. Young Master Drake should've known about this since long ago, right? The general manager already approved it. Your father and Miss Tanya also knew about it. They had visited the site and were satisfied with the materials as the quality was good!"

Timothy smiled and walked closer to Selena. "We're definitely satisfied. I didn't say that we're not. This isn't about the materials!"

"If there's nothing wrong with the material, what is it?" Selena turned around with a frown and reached for a paper cup. "Young Master Drake, you must've drunk lots of wine. Let me pour you a cup of warm water."

Selena bent over at the water dispenser and fetched him a cup of warm water. Her alluring bent figure in her formal dress made Young Master Drake feel rather thirsty. He could not help but swallow his saliva. This woman grew increasingly seductive the more he looked at her.

Timothy's imaginations began to wander as he continued to look at Selena.

With the cup of warm water at hand, Selena turned around toward him only to be stunned at his rather suggestive gaze.

Timothy immediately looked away when he saw Selena turning around. With a grin on his face, he said, "Miss Selena is too generous, but it's not about the material. I know several material-supplying companies that have better branding, a longer history, and their quality is quite nice. The materials they have are indisputably reliable!" He paused here before continuing, "If that's the case, I wonder why Miss Selena chose the Taylor family without even considering these companies? Is it possible that you have some hidden, selfish motives?"

Selena was slightly nervous when Timothy asked her this; this matter caused her quite the discomfort

for quite some time. Although the Taylor family was not bad, Sonia had filtered the other material suppliers and did not pass them to her.

She knew about this, but she chose to ignore it for the Taylor family's sake and signed the contract.

She never expected that Young Master Drake would purposely talk about this after the general manager, Miss Tanya and James had agreed to it.

Did the Drakes want to go back on their word?

This was the assumption and worry that plagued Selena.

After all, this project could help the Taylor family earn quite a revenue. It could guarantee their profit and healthy business development for the next two years.

The project had just started not long ago. It would be troublesome for the Taylor family if the Drakes changed their minds.

“Young Master Drake, are you saying there are several companies better than the Taylor family? I'm not very clear about this as Supervisor Neal is the one who did the research. In the end, she's the one who compiled all pieces of information and handed them to me. Regardless, I felt that only the Taylor family is the most suitable one among all the companies she handed to me!”

With a smile on her face, Selena passed the cup of water to Timothy and added, “The agreement was signed and approved by the general manager. This proves that the Taylor family is entirely capable of such an important role.”

Chapter 754

“Is that so?” Timothy walked over to receive the cup of warm water, and he took another step closer

and moved closer to Selena.

Selena's faint body odor, coupled with her perfume, stimulated Timothy.

"Oh my!" His hand slightly trembled when he took over the cup, causing water from the cup to spill on Selena's chest.

"Ah!" Selena yelped in shock, although the water was not too hot.

"I'm sorry, I'm sorry... I didn't mean to. Let me help you wipe that, Miss Selena." Timothy was prepared for this. As he stretched out his hand toward her, Selena snapped.

"Go away! I can wipe it myself!" Selena was shocked at his advances and took a few steps backing away from him. Timothy was so in taking advantage of her, his hands merely a centimeter away from her attire.

Selena instantly took out several pieces of tissue paper and dabbed them at the soaked area on her clothes.

Timothy was rather disappointed at Selena's quick thinking, but it did not erase his excitement at her flustered state. "Allow me to help you with that, Miss Selena," he urged once more, "I'm good at it!"

"Young Master Drake, what are you talking about? Kindly respect our boundaries or I'll get angry!" Selena's face darkened when she discovered his true, dark intentions. She then angrily added, "If it's work purposes you're concerned with, I'll make my reports. If it's about anything else, please immediately leave. I'm not this kind of woman!"

It did not enrage Timothy when Selena vocally stated her stance; he merely smirked. "Miss Selena, stop acting. Do you think that I don't know what kind of woman you are? You didn't know your husband when you first met him, yet you married him the day you know him and slept with him right after. You

even have a child with him!”

Timothy looked at Selena in disdain. “You slept with a man you just knew. How’s it possible for you to not be charmed by a handsome and rich young master like me? I’ve no intentions of marrying you; I’m not interested in married women like you. Still, you’ve got a nice figure, and you’ve got a rather beautiful face. What say you accompany me for a short while?”

Selena almost fainted due to anger, but she maintained her icy-cold expression and she scoffed, “Young Master Drake, you must’ve had too many drinks tonight. I’ll take this as you speaking nonsense, and I won’t argue with you!”

Selena then pointed at the door. “Now, please get out and stop disturbing me at my workplace. Your image would be destroyed if others knew about what happened here today!”

Selena had a point; Timothy was usually a gentleman in front of others. His actions toward her might very well be due to alcohol influence.

Still, he did not seem drunk, though he might have drank slightly more than usual.

Chapter 755

“You’re a woman! Do you think I, a man, would be afraid if others knew about this if you’re not? Also, who’d believe that you’re innocent? Won’t others say that you’re the one who seduced me for your monthly salary of one million? Who’s in power here: you or me?” Timothy laughed and added, “You think about that, Selena Taylor, and you think it through. I, Timothy Drake, will have you now. You have no choice but to obey me!”

“In your dreams!” Selena was downright livid; she never thought Timothy could be so evil.

“You’d do well to think it thoroughly. If you don’t do as I say, I’ll terminate the contract with the Taylor family. The compensation is only around one hundred million, nothing too much, and we can afford it!” Timothy smiled coldly. “Secondly, I fired your husband, and he’s out of job now. What’ll happen to your

family's expenses now that he lost his monthly salary of twenty million?"

"What?! You...you fired him?!" Selena was taken aback by Timothy's wicked words. This Young Master Drake was too much of a pain. She never thought he had that sadistic streak in him.

"Don't be so agitated! I haven't finished speaking!" Timothy smirked with an extremely definite expression on his face. "Think about it: You guys live in a big villa now with an entire family waiting for your support, and you've got bodyguards and workers you need to pay too.

"I fired your husband because he acted against me, and if you don't submit to me today, I'll fire you too. You purposely signed the agreement with the Taylor family for their wellbeing. I can fire you based on this point alone!"

"You evil man! Young Master Drake, I never thought you'd be such a despicable man!" Selena gritted her teeth in anger. She never thought Timothy would hold the matter against him.

She used to think that Timothy was a kind person like Miss Tanya. After all, siblings usually shared quite a few characteristics.

Apart from that, Timothy usually looked like a gentleman. She had no idea the man before her would have such a foul, wretched heart.

"Oh, I'm despicable?" Timothy laughed coldly after he heard what Selena said. "You're making a false counter-charge. If it wasn't for us Drakes, do you think that your husband would've had such a great job? Do you think that you'd have a great job? You guys were poor people looked down on by the Taylor family and others. You have the life you have now because you guys met us and befriended us. How dare you say that I'm despicable!"

Timothy merely shrugged when he noted Selena's silence and cold expression. "Don't you worry about it. As long as you promise me that you'll serve me well this one time, I wouldn't tell others about this. I won't rescind the contract with the Taylor family, and you get to keep your job. A one-million salary is

barely enough for your family!”

Selena gritted her teeth and was so angry that her face turned pale.

Timothy was pleased when he saw her rooted where she stood, wordlessly; he assumed Selena was complying due to the fear he instilled in her. After all, any other woman would know what choice to make, right?

He walked forward and pulled Selena into his arms. His face leaned closer to hers as though he was about to kiss her. “Miss Selena, just succumb to me. You lose nothing. After all, I’m the Drake family’s young master, son of Eastfield’s wealthiest man. No rich young masters in the entire Eastfield would dare compete with me. Moreover, your husband won’t know about this if you don’t tell him, understand?”

“You bastard, let go of me!” Selena was so angry that she resisted Timothy’s embrace and fought back.No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 756-760

Chapter 756

Timothy laughed at Selena’s struggle. “And why should I let you go? Just give in to me!” He pushed her onto the table with all his might, ready to grab her.

“Go away!” In her fear and panic, Selena kicked Timothy right in between his legs when he was close enough.

“Argh!” Timothy yelled in pain and fell onto his knees in a squatting position.

Selena instantly shot up as Timothy fell, merely sparing him a glare as she rushed toward the door. “Young Master Drake, you bastard! I quit!” Selena ripped open the door and rushed out right after.

...

“What’s going on? Manager Taylor ran out of her office!” Employees were startled to see Selena rushing out of her office.

“Did he fail? Manager Taylor’s hair seems to be ruffled up a little, but she opened the door and ran straight out. She seemed to have just cried, too,” said Felicia dumbfoundedly. “This doesn’t seem right. This shouldn’t be happening if they have something going behind the scenes. Shouldn’t she be very happy?”

“How would I know? Let’s go check it out.” Sonia immediately walked with Felicia toward Selena’s office. They peered into the office and discovered Young Master Drake on the floor: he had his hands over his private parts as he hissed in pain.

“How dare Selena Taylor do this?! What should Young Master Drake do if he can’t bear children in the future?” Sonia said angrily. She immediately went in with Felicia to assist Young Master Drake.

Meanwhile, Selena rushed to the parking lot. She pulled the door to her car open and went inside before crying out her frustrations. It took a while before she could reach out for a tissue paper to wipe her tears, and it was only after that was she able to calm herself down before she made her way home.

...

Jack was smoking in their yard when he saw Selena’s car entering the compound and was parked. “Honey, you’re back.” Jack walked over to his wife with a small smile on his face.

“Yes,” came Selena’s simple reply and went to sit with him quietly.

“Honey, I quit my job,” Jack started, his smile bitter as he spoke. “But truthfully, I was fired by Young Master Drake. No need to worry, though. Our family will still have money to rely on.”

Selena listened on and instantly recalled how she was almost taken advantage of by Timothy. Her nose twitched and her eyes turned slightly red. She looked at Jack upsettingly and said, “Honey, I... I’ve also quit my job. We are both out of jobs! What should we do?”

“You quit, too?” The news stunned Jack, but he could sense his wife’s unstable emotions. “What actually happened?” he prodded.

“That bastard Timothy Drake came looking for me in my office after he had some drinks. He even threatened me with the Taylor family’s agreement about sourcing materials and the fact that he’d fire me. He wants to take advantage of me and even forced himself on me when I refused him!

“Thankfully, I reacted fast and kicked his crotch at the given time. I managed to escape right after that.”

Face written with fear, Selena looked at her husband and blurted, “What should I do? I’d be in so much trouble if my mother knows I lost my job!”

Jack was livid at the details his wife told him. “F*ck... Is Timothy Drake looking for a death wish? I don’t give a damn if he does things to me, but how dare he go looking for you at your office? You didn’t even do anything to him!” Jack shot up from his seat and threw the cigarette butt onto the ground before stepping on it. His hands then tightened, balled into fists.

Chapter 757

“I’m going to get an explanation from him,” snapped Jack.

“Don’t! This is the Drake family we’re talking about here!” Selena was extremely frightened when she saw Jack’s impulsive look and took his hands into hers. “Honey, don’t go. It’s the Drake family, and it’s not a good idea to offend them. Apart from that, he didn’t get to touch me inappropriately. While he did forcibly embrace me, I managed to break free!”

“That means nothing to me. What would’ve happened if you failed to run away in time? The Drake family has to give me an explanation! How dare he try to take advantage of you!” Jack’s fists tightened even more. He turned to Selena and, carrying her in his arms bridal-style, walked toward the car when he saw her hands still on his.

“What are you doing? I asked you to not go there!” Selena was flustered yet worried as he held her up like a princess, though it did not erase her anxiety. After all, the Drake family was a family that even first-class aristocratic families dared not offend. Could Jack succeed alone?

“Don’t you worry; I won’t kill Tanya’s brother as a sign of respect for our friendship. However, if he doesn’t kneel and apologize, I’ll show him no mercy!” Jack still had a darkened expression on his face. He placed Selena at the passenger’s seat before he went and sat at the driver’s seat.

“Honey, just let it go. I know you love me, but I don’t want to offend the Drake family! It’s not good to have another enemy,” coaxed Selena in an attempt to persuade Jack. She did not want him to act irrationally. “Apart from that, they’re the Drakes! They might have lots of masters with them!”

“Don’t you worry. Their masters are no match for your husband. He’s far more powerful than any of them combined.” Adamant and indifferent, Jack stepped on the gas pedal and the car soon raced out of the villa.

“Why are they going out again? Didn’t they just come back a while ago?” Several bodyguards who strolled around the perimeter not far away wondered what was happening when they saw the situation. At the same time, they felt jealous as they saw how Jack carried Selena in his arms.

“You’re so hard-headed! Why won’t you listen to my advice?!” Selena relented once she knew it was a point for no return for her husband. He wanted to confront the Drake family! The Drakes might turn hostile against them if Jack went over and caused trouble!

More importantly, how could Jack oppose the entire Drake family’s masters?

...

Young Master Drake struggled in pain for quite some time before he could even stand up. He then walked out embarrassingly and returned to the Drake family mansion.

He was more than ready to go to bed as the drinks made him feel dizzy. The last thing he expected was for James, Tanya, and several masters of the Drake family to wait for him when he entered the villa's living room.

"Father, Tanya, why are you guys here? Why aren't you guys asleep yet?" Timothy's face darkened as he sensed something was amiss when he noted several Drake family elders were present.

This only happened when something important had to be announced. Coincidentally, he had fired Jack, and it seemed that his sister had relayed the news to them.

James' face darkened and questioned Timothy, "You know what you've done today, right?"

Timothy was utterly displeased. "Of course I do. I fired a mere bodyguard, no? Did you have to get a crowd here like this? Why did you ask the elders to come out?" came his somewhat apathetic reply as he sat down on the sofa.

James laughed bitterly. "What did I tell you? Did you ignore what I've told you? I asked you to not offend Jack and stay on his good side! Why didn't you listen?!" James was downright livid at him and was close to fainting in his anger. His son made the worst move possible with his deplorable attitude.

Chapter 758

Timothy, at that moment, recalled how a marshal failed to defeat Jack. With a guilty conscience, he blurted, "I didn't know Jack could be so powerful! I thought he was just a head commander, unworthy of our family's respect and admiration. I only knew this when a marshal from the Turner family failed to

defeat him, and that was only after I fired him!”

“I’ve told you long before that he’s considerably on par with Kings of War. It doesn’t matter even if he’s just a one-star King of War! More importantly, he’s well acquainted with the Goddess of War. Can’t you see that? The Goddess of War willingly interacted with me because of our relationship with Jack!” James grew increasingly angry the more he thought about it.

“So what? I can just look for them tomorrow and ask them to return to work as usual!” Timothy had no choice but to obey his father after he thought about it. After all, many of the Drakes eyed him sharply and none went up to defend him.

“Think about his temperament! Do you think that he’s short of money if he really is a King of War? The country would’ve given him several tens of billions as his reward. We were extremely lucky that somebody like him was willing to work as our bodyguard. He agreed to work for us because he was bored with nothing to do.

“Do you think he’d still agree to it now?” James laughed. He knew Jack’s identity was not as simple as how he portrayed it, but Jack managed to keep himself incredibly low-profile and seldom exposed his true combat abilities to the public. This caused others to believe he was a mere head commander.

“How’s that possible? And does he really have that much money?” Timothy’s face darkened; he made a huge mistake if that was true. Still, as he recalled how ordinary Jack was and how he promised to be their bodyguard proactively, he still felt that his father’s beliefs were too overboard. How could such a rich person agree to be a bodyguard?

“Bullcrap. He’s definitely a King of War, so it’s only natural he has a lot of money!” scoffed James with a cold expression on his face.

“Why would he willingly work as a bodyguard if he has so much money? If it was me, I wouldn’t work as a bodyguard. I don’t want to be looked down at by others!” Timothy frowned. He glanced at Tanya who was beside him, and his eyes lit up. “Unless... The reason this guy works as our bodyguard isn’t for money but for women. I think he likes my sister. If that’s the case, it’s very easy to get into his good books. We can just marry Tanya to him, right?”

Timothy tried to find ways around the matter.

Though it took a while, Tanya noticed something peculiar in Timothy's replies and said, "Wait, Brother. Did you say 'them' just now? What does that mean?"

Timothy scratched his head in embarrassment. "The thought of Jack talking back at me plagued me after I drank some wine... So I fired his wife in retaliation."

"What?!" James' chest heaved in anger when he heard this. "You... You! It's understandable if you committed a mistake once, but how dare you make them one after another! You're ridiculous! Even if Jack talked back to you, how could you fire his wife too?!"

"I... I told you! I was just unhappy at that moment!"

Chapter 759

Timothy tried to find an excuse for his actions.

"Aren't you afraid of offending him? Let me tell you this: If you end up genuinely offending him, I... I can't even save you!" James was so angry that he was at a loss for words. He had one son, and he turned out to be this.

"Impossible! Are you joking? We're a first-class aristocratic family, and we have so many masters here with us! While I admit Jack's good, I don't believe we'd lose if everyone fights him as a group," came Timothy's somewhat apathetic reply. He did not believe Jack would be that terrifying.

James glanced at Timothy and announced coldly, "Oh, that's right. We're waiting for you here because we need to tell you something. I feel that you're out of focus recently, so I've visited South City Group only to find out that it's been losing money. Because of this, South City Group will be managed by your sister, Tanya starting from tomorrow. I suppose you can have a breather and a break of sorts."

Timothy wondered if he had heard his father wrongly and looked at James dumbfoundedly. “What? Did I hear that right, Father? Did you just say South City Group?”

In Timothy’s point of view, Tanya was just a child and it was difficult for her to bear such great responsibility. Apart from that, he was the one who managed South City Group all this while, thus he believed no one should interfere with his business. South City Group represented half the Drake family group’s businesses, and the ability to manage this group represented the person’s identity in the Drake family.

It was because of this that Timothy had always been extremely proud of himself. He was the subject of people’s envious looks whenever he walked outside because the Drake family relied on him to manage their businesses.

While he also managed several smaller companies, those companies were nothing when compared to South City Group.

“Yes, you heard right. South City Group,” James said indifferently. “While your sister tends to shop quite often, I observed the companies she managed and they’re doing quite well. I believe your sister would do a better job than you if I hand South City Group to her!”

“Father, are you joking?” Timothy was still in disbelief. “Tanya... Tanya is just a young child. How could she be more experienced than me at business management? Apart from that, I’ve been managing South City Group all this time. I’m aware we’ve started losing money during these few months, but it’s temporary. We’ve raked up quite the fortune years before this. Do you not see the success I’ve accomplished?”

He stood up and got increasingly agitated. “You want to change the higher management just because the loss we experience these two to three months? Aren’t you afraid that Tanya would fail at managing the place?”

James laughed him off before he replied, “Don’t you worry. I’ve thought about it and discussed it with

several higher-ups many times before I made this decision. You're definitely unsuitable to continue working as South City Group's highest management with your current situation and status!"

Suddenly, Harvey ran into the room with several other bodyguards. "Master, Master! Something bad is happening!" There was a deep frown on his face as he spoke. "Big Brother... No, Jack is here with his wife, and he wants an explanation from us. If he's not satisfied with our explanation, he...he'd make his move!"

Chapter 760

"He... He's too brash! What does he mean by 'make his move'? Father, listen to him. His actions are a disrespect to the Drake family!" Timothy sucked in a deep breath when he heard what the bodyguards were saying about Jack. Admittingly, he was scared. Did Selena tell Jack what happened in the office?

He first recalled the fact that he did not manage to take advantage of Selena. It did not matter if Selena was embarrassed or she had the intention of actually manipulating the Drake family; she would not have told Jack about what happened between them.

The last thing Timothy expected was for Jack to look for him, and that meant big trouble.

Because of this, he had to provoke the relationship between his father and Jack.

"He's doing too much. This is threatening our Drake family!" One of the Drake family's masters was displeased. This master's fighting abilities were much stronger than Spectre. He feared no marshals and was able to fight with Kings of War.

This master was the first one to stand up against Jack's threats.

"Yes, what Elder Gordon says makes sense. This guy always acts like this, and we should put him in his place!" Timothy was relieved that someone shared his stance in the matter, and it was someone powerful to boot.

“How dare you agree to the master? He’s brave enough to say it because he’s got the power to back it up!” Tanya glared at his brother before looking at James. “Father, what should we do now? It seems that Jack is unhappy about Timothy firing his wife. He wouldn’t have come here if it wasn’t for this matter.”

“Tanya, what you’re doing here is uplifting others and destroying your own. How would we know that Elder Gordon isn’t his match without even attempting anything?” snapped Timothy.

“Yes, Miss Tanya. Are you looking down on us masters, or do you place too much faith in Jack?” Elder Gordon was slightly unhappy. He was considered one of the best masters in the Drake family though he had never fought with Jack. Tanya’s words blatantly meant she looked down on them and stated that they were not Jack’s opponents.

“Elder Gordon, don’t make a move without my order. Jack is here asking for an explanation, and he didn’t tell us straightforwardly what he wanted to do. This means that there are ways to settle this!” James thought about it and said, “Let’s go and discuss it with him. It might work if we apologize and ask them to return to work tomorrow.”

Many people nodded and they followed James outside.

...

James and his company eventually arrived at the mansion’s front door. Jack and his wife, Selena, stood right outside in silence.

As everyone gathered, Tanya was the first to walk forward and offered her apologies. “Jack, I heard that my brother fired Sister Selena in anger. I’m very sorry for that,” Tanya spoke solemnly. “My brother tends to speak nonsense whenever he’s drunk. He was just in his feelings, so please don’t take him seriously.”

“Indeed. Timothy was angry, so whatever he said was only out of his emotions. Go back, rest, and come back for work tomorrow.” James was pleased with how understanding his daughter was, and Jack might reconsider his actions after he heard Tanya’s sincere words. After all, was it not petty to be calculative with a drunk person?

“Come on, Jack, let’s just leave it at that.” No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 761-765

Chapter 761

Selena was slightly afraid when she saw that many people in front of her. Most of the bodyguards were also there. Soon, there were one to two hundred people at the Drake family’s side. She immediately persuaded Jack.

However, Jack still stood there and did not move. He looked at Timothy coldly and said, “Timothy, come over, kneel, and apologize to my wife. Kowtow three times and I will let things slide. If not, you’ll regret it when I make my move!”

“Bastard, aren’t you being too much?!” Elder Gordon could not handle it anymore. He was originally cranky so he walked two steps forward, looked at Jack, and said, “This is the Drake family! Do you know who Timothy is? He’s the eldest young master of our family! It’s fine to directly address him by his name, but, how dare you ask someone as honorable as him to kneel and kowtow to you! You’re being really arrogant!”

Jack looked at this old man coldly before saying. “I’m speaking to Timothy so please don’t interrupt our conversation!”

“You...” Elder Gordon was extremely angry and held his hands into fists. “Sure. They all mentioned that you are strong and since you dare act so presumptuously in front of the Drake family mansion, let me try you!”

“Elder Gordon, stop!” James immediately stopped him.

He smiled at Jack after Elder Gordon stopped. "Jack, my son really acted impulsive after several drinks. I hope you can understand him!" James paused here before continuing. "How about this. You guys can come back for work and I will pay you double your salary next month. Apart from that, I will pay you one hundred million as compensation. How does that sound?"

As the richest man in Eastfield, James had already made a huge compromise by saying this.

"Master Drake, I'm sorry but what happened today cannot be solved with money. If it wasn't because the Drake family treated me well and I consider Miss Tanya as my best friend, everybody here would have died, and you would be waiting for your bodies to be collected!" Jack raised his hand and pointed at the people in front of him. His tone was plain but his words were extremely domineering.

"Honey..." Selena was speechless. She knew something like this was going to happen with her husband's character. The Drake family had already taken such a huge step back but Jack still refused to back away.

"You f*cker!" Elder Gordon could not hold it back any longer. He forgot James's instructions, stepped forward, and rushed toward Jack with his hands balled into fists.

Jack curled his lips into a cold smile when he saw how the other party initiated the attack. He balled his hands into fists and punched toward the opponent too.

With a slightly dull bang, Elder Gordon flew outward. He flew several meters away before stepping on the ground and stabilizing his body.

"You can't take such a small amount of my force. How dare you act arrogantly in front of me?" Jack glanced at the opponent in disdain. He had a kingly aura and a contempt for the world as he spoke.

Elder Gordon was shocked. Jack's punch seemed simple but the power in it was so terrifying that it threw him into the air while Jack was still standing there firmly.

What Jack said also caused him to be afraid!

Chapter 762

"Elder Gordon, stop! Are you refusing to listen to me?" James also noticed that Elder Gordon was definitely not Jack's opponent.

However, he had already made a move. After his failure, he could only stand there and glare at Jack.

After all, he might die very miserably if he rushed forward and fought Jack. If he stopped right now, he would lose his face.

Elder Gordon humphed coldly after he heard what James said. "Young man, I'll bear with it today because my master asked me to. However, this is the Drake family mansion, if you dare act rampantly, I will not hold back anymore!" Elder Gordon retreated after he said that.

The corners of Timothy's mouth twitched several times. He finally noticed that if Elder Gordon acted alone, he was definitely not Jack's opponent. Apart from that, Elder Gordon was someone who loved to protect his dignity. He left these words just so he could exit with honor.

"Alright, Jack. How about this? It's fine if you and Miss Selena don't want to come back to work. This time, my son was the one who acted impulsively. I will give you eight hundred million. How about that? Let's agree to let it go!" After thinking about it, James gritted his teeth and proactively said.

In his opinion, this amount of compensation was already more than enough. Apart from that, he just found out that his son fired the two of them not too long ago. He was slightly unhappy when Jack did not want to let this go.

However, he knew that he could not offend Jack, so he could only hope that he could spend money to avoid disaster.

“Honey, why don’t we just let it go. Eight hundred million is already a lot!” Selena bit her lips and persuaded Jack.

It was a pity as Jack still sneered. “Master Drake, I would have killed your son if it weren’t for Tanya! My request is simple, he needs to kneel down and apologize to my wife. He also needs to slap himself ten times. Otherwise, I will take action!”

“Jack, aren’t you asking for too much?” Even Tanya got angry. She looked at Jack in disbelief. “My brother shouldn’t have fired you nor your wife. After all, your wife did nothing wrong. No matter what, my brother is the young master of the Drake family. How should my brother continue living his life if he kneels down and apologizes to your wife? You even asked him to slap himself in the face.”

“Jack, please consider this. Eight hundred million is really a lot, why don’t you think about it again?” Yvonne bit her lips. She did not expect Jack to make this matter such a huge ordeal. This was somewhat unlike the Jack she knew.

However, Jack sneered and said, “there is nothing to consider. It doesn’t matter if Young Master Timothy fired my wife. However, he tried to take advantage of my wife after several drinks. He went to the office, locked the door, and tried to forcefully take advantage of my wife. If my wife hadn’t found the opportunity to kick him and escaped, she might have suffered!”

Having said that, Jack looked at Yvonne and questioned her. “Miss Yvonne, would you easily forgive such a person if you were in such a situation? If someone harassed you and gave you some money to silence you, would you be able to forgive that person?”

“How’s this possible? Brother, you...you actually treated sister Selena...” Tanya finally realized that Jack’s anger was not just about Timothy firing his wife. It turned out that her brother actually went to the company alone and tried to rape Jack’s wife.

If this happened to another man, they might have been afraid of the Drake family or they might have chosen money to avoid disaster.

However, if it was a burly and hardcore man like Jack, it was impossible to ask for his forgiveness.

“He...he’s talking nonsense!”

Chapter 763

Timothy was so frightened. He could only grit his teeth and refused to admit to it when he saw so many people looking at him.

“Nonsense?” This time, even Selena could not stand it and looked at Timothy bitterly. “Timothy, I didn’t expect you to be a coward who dared not admit to what you did. If you say so, why don’t we head to the company and ask the people there? We have so many employees, do you think they didn’t hear anything?”

Timothy’s face instantly turned blue and purple when he heard what she said. Yes, it was definitely difficult to explain what happened previously.

Originally, he could tell people in the company that it was Selena who wanted to seduce him. Many people would have believed what he said. Now that Jack has brought his wife to his house, nobody would have believed him if he used this excuse. That would be extremely troublesome.

“You...you bastard!” James finally realized what a nasty thing his son had done. He stepped forward and slapped Timothy with all his might. “I’m really disappointed in you. I thought that you had just fired the two of them, I didn’t expect you to try to force Miss Selena. No wonder Jack is so angry!”

Elder Gordon, who originally felt that Jack had gone overboard, finally realized that he was almost manipulated by Timothy. If he was in this position and his woman was almost raped by somebody else, he would have killed that person early on.

As for Jack’s action of asking Timothy to kneel down and apologize while slapping himself ten times was

actually very kind of Jack. He did this because of his history with the Drake family and he was giving Tanya face.

Timothy, who was slapped in the cheeks, covered his face in anger. "Father, you...you actually hit me because of this? I admit that I was impulsive at that time. I had too many drinks and Selena looked really pretty. She even had a short skirt on. Isn't that very normal? Besides, I was unsuccessful in my attempt!"

"unsuccessful? If you succeeded, none of you here would leave Eastfield alive!" Jack sneered after he heard this, and walked step by step toward Timothy.

His eyes were filled with a murderous aura. The aura was the same one that sent shivers down everyone's spine on the battlefield.

"Do you still feel that you did nothing wrong? I gave you a chance, but you didn't cherish it!" Jack approached step by step and his voice was very low. He had a scary and invisible aura around him that made people feel repressed.

"You fool, why aren't you kneeling down and apologizing yet? Hurry up and do what Jack said! Kneel down and apologize to Miss Selena. Hurry up and slap yourself!" James was very frightened. The other masters in the Drake Family stood there and were all frightened too. They knew that Jack was about to take action.

After all, Timothy did make a mistake this time and they were all embarrassed to make moves.

"I won't apologize! I'm the young master of the Drake family, why should I apologize to them?!" Timothy gritted his teeth and looked at Jack. He did not believe that Jack would dare take action. After all, the Drake family was the biggest known power in this province.

Jack directly jumped up and kicked Timothy on his crotch. Timothy flew outward.

The next second, Timothy hit the ground far away and fainted.

Chapter 764

Timothy's pants seeped with fresh blood. It was a frightening sight.

The corners of James's mouth twitched. His features were twisted into a grimace, but he did not let a single word slip from him.

The entire area was completely silent—so silent that you could hear a pin drop!

This was the Young Master of the Drake family, and yet Jack had lashed out against him all the same. Now he just lay there, and no one knew if he was still alive.

"Master..."

Spectre stepped forward, frowning. He did not know what to say.

He knew that James's heart was filled with excruciating pain.

"Come forward all you like, if you wish to avenge him. But I'm afraid that you won't be able to bear the consequences once you make the first move!" Jack said, expression stony.

Although James's insides were twisted with agony, he forced himself to smile. "It's all right, Jack, so long as you let off some steam! Just say the word if you need any more compensation!"

Jack gave a wan smile. "No need!"

He wheeled around and left, taking Selena with him. "Don't worry. Your son isn't dead. But I can't say for certain if he'll be producing any heirs in the future."

Selena glanced behind her shoulder, afraid that the fighters and the bodyguards employed by the Drake family would rush forward. She only released a sigh of relief once they got onto the car and drove off.

"Are you sure Timothy won't be rendered infertile from that kick of yours, Dear? James only has him as the only son, after all. Won't he try to take revenge in the future? I know you're venting your anger, but I'm still afraid!"

Selena frowned, her expression morphing to that of concern.

Jack glanced at her and managed a mirthless smile. "Don't worry. James is smart enough. He won't cause trouble for me even if his son can no longer produce heirs for their family. I've already been kind enough to him by sparing his son's life. No man has the right to touch my wife. You suffered so much for me and our daughter's sake. You paid the price for so many years. I won't let you go through any more humiliation!"

Warmth filled Selena as she heard him speak such earnest words. She pursed her lips before she spoke, "All right then. I just never expected that you would have no fear even with the Drake family! This is far beyond my expectations!"

Jack did not know whether to laugh or cry after he heard that. "Dear, would you be touched or frightened if all nine of the Gods of War came to your birthday party?"

Selena went speechless for a while when she heard that. Then she rolled her eyes. "What are you saying? It'll be an utmost honor even if only Lana came. How can all nine of the Gods of War come? Besides, they're so busy, and every second of theirs is extremely precious. How could they have the time to spare for me?"

Here, Selena seemed to think of something, then she said jokingly, "Don't tell me that you're the master

of the nine Gods of War? Each of the Gods of War is strong in their own way, and they're extremely powerful. If they even had a master, he would not even be human!"

Jack gave a curious expression. Did his wife just tell him that he was not human right to his face?

He gave a brittle smile and asked, "What is he then, if not human?"

"A god!"

Selena spoke in a matter-of-fact tone, "What kind of a person would a master of the nine Gods of War be if not a god? But of course, there's no one like that. In the future, don't simply joke that you're the master of the Gods of War. It'll be troublesome if someone were to write a report about it and spread the news about you."

Here, Selena drew a finger across her throat. "You're writing yourself a death sentence if you anger the Gods of War," she said. "It won't get any better just because you're good friends with Lana. A joke like this is too frightening!"

Jack placed his hand on her thigh when he heard that, flashing a small smile. "All right. I'll listen to you, dear. I won't claim that they're my disciples anymore, okay? But I still hope that they can come over and celebrate on the day of your birthday!"

"You hope?"

Chapter 765

Selena did not know whether to laugh or cry. "What use is there in hoping? Why should I have hope if they're not going to come!"

"Do you really want them to come? Then I should invite them over!"

Jack smiled and spoke in a confident tone, "I believe that they'll definitely preserve my dignity!"

"My goodness. You're speaking as though you had plenty of dignity, to begin with!"

Selena rolled her eyes at him. Then she noticed that his hand was on her thigh. She picked it up, cheeks flushing. "Drive properly and don't put your hands everywhere. Seriously!"

"Looks like you're embarrassed!"

Jack chuckled. "I'll place it everywhere when it's bedtime. How about that?"

The pink on Selena's cheeks deepened. "I can't be bothered with you, you pervert! Now we're both jobless, and you've offended the Drake family. I just pray that James really won't come for us, like what you said!"

"Don't worry. He would have done something just now if he wanted to take revenge! Would he have let us leave just like that?"

They quickly arrived at the villa. After he parked the car, Jack said, "Oh, right. Let me tell you how I was fired by Timothy!"

"Oh, yeah. I would have forgotten if you hadn't mentioned it. Timothy said that you talked against him. What on earth happened? Weren't you doing your job just fine for the Drake family?"

Selena immediately asked as the thought popped into her head.

"That's because I struck big today—I won a bet worth one billion dollars just like that!"

Jack got down from the car. "So don't worry. I earned a billion dollars today," he said, grinning. "We'll be fine even if you stay at home and become a housewife. We can even go for a honeymoon when we're free!"

"Our child is already so big, and you're still thinking of a honeymoon? Only you could think of something like that!"

Selena's heart was leaping in delight. She wound her arm around Jack's and walked toward the villa's entrance. "So tell me, how did you win the billion dollars?"

"Billiards. Because..."

Jack then told everything that had transpired in the morning to Selena.

"You learned to play that fast? You've never played it before, but you just knew how to play once you got into it. And you won a billion dollars?"

Shock rippled throughout Selena when she finished listening to the story.

...

At the moment in the Drake family's residence.

After Jack left, Tanya ran over to check on Timothy, who was still unconscious. She furrowed her brows and looked at her father. "What do we do, Dad?"

"What else can we do but to quickly take him to the hospital? If Jack says he's not dead, he's not dead."

We need to get him to the hospital immediately. Let's pray that Timothy will still be able to have heirs. But his future will be even more uncertain if we're a second too late!"

James immediately declared before ordering his men to take his son to the hospital.

He released a sigh. "Seriously. Why would Timothy dare to do something like that? He really dug a grave for himself!" No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 766-770

Chapter 766

"Master, are we really going to let this slide just like that? The young master... He's..."

One of the fighters stepped forward and asked James.

Although he could not say that the young master did not deserve it, Jack had just brought his wife to the Drake family's residence and beat Young Master Drake into a pulp. Plenty of passersby outside would have seen everything.

This was a cause of extreme humiliation for the Drake family. Fortunately, not many people had witnessed the incident, but the Drake family's reputation had really been trampled on.

"I really think there's no way out of this. Jack is too strong. There's no way to take him on by oneself—at least for me!"

Elder Gordon finally spoke up after he thought about it. In reality, he wanted to say that it would be useless even if all of them went for Jack at the same time. He tried to tone it down though, for the sake of their dignity.

"It's obvious that Jack has full confidence, judging from how he spoke just now. He's very sure of himself.

So all we can do is to forget about this incident!”

James gave a helpless smile. “I’ve already chided Timothy so many times, but he simply refused to listen to me. Never mind that he fired both Jack and Selena, but he actually dared to touch the latter. Ah. If it were you, wouldn’t you think about killing him? Jack had been considering the relationship between us from before, and his friendship with Tanya, that’s why...”

The fighters could do nothing but bob their heads in obedience when they heard him say that, keeping as quiet as they could.

“Dad, we’re missing a procurement manager in South Hill Real Estate now that Miss Taylor has quit her job. What do we do?”

Tanya added after she thought about it, “Besides, I’m afraid that it’ll turn awry for us if the Taylor family continues to be in charge of that project...”

James nodded his head. “You’re right. If news of how Jack had beaten your brother up gets out, and how we did not retaliate, the Drake family will definitely become a laughing stock. We should be stirring up some trouble for him, after all. How about this? You take charge of South Hill Real Estate and make Sonia take the position of procurement manager. I pray she doesn’t let me down!”

Tanya nodded her head. “I’ll get Sonia to terminate the contract with the Taylor family. And we won’t compensate for the breach of contract either. Let’s just do that as our ‘retaliation’. It won’t be so embarrassing for us if word of this gets out then!”

Hearing those words fall from her mouth felt like a joke. The Drake family was the strongest, richest family in the entire Eastfield. It was extremely embarrassing that her older brother had been beaten—and beaten into that state. This sort of retaliation was truly a joke, but it was better than nothing. It would convey the Drake family’s stance toward the matter.

Elder Gordon considered everything carefully before he made a suggestion, “Master, why don’t we just

tell everyone that the young master's injuries are not too serious even if they're actually serious or if he becomes impotent. This way, we'll only be dissolving our cooperation with the Taylor family because he was not too seriously injured. It won't be that embarrassing if we put it that way."

James thought that it made sense. "You're right. We'll go over to the hospital in a while and check up on my son. His condition must be kept a secret. We'll get the doctors to diagnose that he has mild injuries from a fistfight. There'll be nothing serious!"

After Jack and Selena went back, they quickly showered and went downstairs, sitting together at the table for dinner.

"Selena, Jack has been fired by Timothy!"

Fiona smiled. "But it doesn't matter. Jack won a billion dollars from billiards," she said. "One whole billion! He lost his job, but it's great that he has a billion to his name now. We won't have to worry about having no money in the future! This money doesn't belong to the entire Taylor family. It belongs to us!"

Chapter 767

Selena gave a bitter smile. "Ma, Jack already told me about this," she said. "Actually, I've been fired as well. No—I quit. I didn't want to do it anymore!"

"What!"

The smile on Fiona's face immediately froze. "Jack had been fired for lashing against Young Master Drake, and he had lashed out because of the billion dollars in the first place," she said, stupefied. "This is completely understandable, but why did you quit? This is an entirely different matter."

Selena flicked her gaze between Jack and Fiona. "It's nothing. I just don't want to continue doing that job any longer," she lied, fearing that her mother would fret for her. "It's pointless to me. More importantly, my subordinates don't cooperate with me, and they even talk about me behind my back!"

“You’re out of your mind, Selena. Jack doesn’t have a job now, and neither do you. Plus, your salary was so high!”

Andrew shook his head and took a sip of wine. “But it doesn’t matter now. You’ve already quit, so now we’ll just have to be wise with the money we have. It should be enough.”

“You’re right, Dad,” Ben chipped in, grinning. “We only need enough money to live on. We can’t be like Ma, who only has eyes for money. We should always be satisfied with whatever we have!”

“What are you saying, you brat? What sane person would give up their chances of getting more money? Why shouldn’t we want more, knowing that we could have more?”

Fiona glared at her son. “Besides, ten billion isn’t a lot either. It all depends on how you spend it. I heard that a jeweler in Eastfield has recently crafted an extremely expensive necklace. It’s entirely laid with diamonds, and more importantly, it’s one of its kind in the entire world. There’s also a huge ruby as its main jewel. It’s absolutely gorgeous! It’s called ‘Heart of the Abyss’, or something like that anyway!”

“Really? It’s just a necklace though. No way that it’s worth more than a hundred million!”

Ben smiled and spoke nonchalantly. He raised his glass of wine and took a sip from it. “The taste of this red wine is splendid, and it cost over twenty thousand dollars. This is a luxury to me already!”

“You’re so narrow-minded. They say that that necklace is worth more than 900 million dollars—almost up to a billion!”

Fiona continued, “There’s only one of its kind in the world. But more importantly, this necklace is the jeweler’s true treasure. They don’t have any intentions of selling it off. They’re just putting it on exhibition at a critical moment!”

“Pfft!”

Ben spat some of his wine out. “What the f*ck. That’s way too expensive!”

“What are you saying? Of course, the necklace is expensive!”

Fiona rolled her eyes at him. “If only I could afford something like that!”

Jack was surprised as well when he heard that. He took a sip of wine. “Such an expensive necklace would definitely look good on Selena. Ruby...I remember that you like red!”

Selena flashed a bitter smile. “What use is there to like it? No way I can wear something like that. Besides, they won’t sell it even if we want to buy it!”

Chapter 768

Jack could only manage a smile. “Mother, where is this necklace housed?” he asked Fiona. “Why haven’t I heard of this!”

“It’s on the second floor in Tamsin Mall—the biggest jeweler there. The jewels they sell there are seriously expensive,” she replied. “A regular person would be too embarrassed to walk in there. Any item of theirs is easily worth over a hundred thousand!”

Fiona paused here before continuing, “I so happened to catch their advertisement banner while I was passing by. That’s how I knew. They imported the jewel from Gin City, and they’re preparing to exhibit it in a few days. It’s being advertised on television too!”

“No regular person would be able to dream of wearing it!”

Andrew gave an indifferent smile. "The rarest things are the ones that are the most expensive in this world. Of course, the necklace would be so expensive, if it were the only one of its kind. It's normal for it to be worth over 900 million!"

"More importantly, no one has ever worn that necklace before. It's been used for exhibitions. They had wanted to find someone to help shoot an advertisement, but it seems like there are no celebrities who were suitable to wear it. Their boss is a very crafty person!"

Fiona said, smiling.

Jack and the others went upstairs after they finished their meal.

"Oh, I can finally sleep in tomorrow now that I don't have to go to work!"

Selena smiled bitterly and loosened a breath. "But I'm still a little worried, dear. What if the Drake family doesn't forgive us and come to us looking for trouble? I really suspect that that kick of yours has rendered Young Master Drake impotent!"

Jack thought about it for a while. "It's very likely that he'll have to be castrated," he said. "No way about it though. Who said that he could bully my wife? No one bullies my wife like that!"

After he said that, he glanced toward Selena. A wicked grin spread across his lips. "Dear, why don't we get all tangled up tonight, since you don't have work tomorrow?"

Selena's face immediately reddened when she heard this. "Oh, quiet. You're such a pervert!"

"Can't help it. You're too beautiful!"

Jack chuckled and planted his lips on Selena's.

For the remainder of the night, Selena felt extremely tired. When she woke up the next morning, it was already ten o'clock.

"Thank goodness I don't have to go to work today. I'd be extremely late otherwise!"

Selena's lips twisted into a wry smile when she saw the time.

She craned her head around—only to find that Jack was already gone. "What on earth? He's not working anymore either. Since when did he disappear?"

At the moment, Jack was already outside the biggest shopping mall in the city. He took the elevator and got off on the second floor, heading toward the exclusive jeweler's shop.

He went straight for the entrance. A young, pretty saleswoman welcomed him. "Welcome, sir. Are you looking for any gems in particular?"

Jack nodded his head. "I'm here to buy the 'Heart of the Abyss'!" he said. "Where is it?"

The saleswoman was stunned when she heard that. She recollected her wits after a few seconds had passed. "Ahem. You're such a jester, sir," she said, smiling. "The Heart of the Abyss is extremely expensive. Not just anyone can afford it. The necklaces we have on public display here are already worth 100 to 200 thousand dollars. We only have the best products here. Besides, we shipped the Heart of the Abyss here for an exhibition. It's not for sale!"

"Isn't it worth 900 million dollars? I'll pay two billion. How about that?"

Jack believed that anything could be bought so long as the price was right. After all, a necklace like that was still a product.

Chapter 769

“Are you joking, sir? It’s 900 million dollars, and you’re increasing its worth to two billion?”

The pretty saleswoman was tickled by Jack’s words.

Another saleswoman walked over after she heard that. “Go out and take a closer look at the advertisement outside our store, sir. Is 900 million written there? If the Abyss is worth merely 900 million, everyone should just sell all their assets to buy it first. They’ll be earning big dollars after they get it!”

“It’s not 900 million?”

Frowning, Jack walked out; the two pretty saleswoman tailed after him.

He looked at the price tag, scanning through the chain of ‘0’s right after the digit 9. He silently counted the zeroes twice, and shock suddenly seized him. “It’s nine billion! Seems like my mother-in-law miscounted and missed a zero there!”

“Why don’t you take a look at our other merchandise, sir? It’s clear that you can afford it, and we carry plenty of exquisite necklaces here. The Heart of the Abyss is definitely not for sale. And it’s not worth just 900 million dollars—it’s nine billion!”

The first saleswoman to have greeted Jack gave a wan smile.

Although Jack was wearing regular clothing, she noted that he dared to pay two billion dollars. He was probably a wealthy man who liked to keep a low profile.

However, his mother-in-law had missed a zero in her calculations, causing him to run into this kerfuffle.

She believed that he would have given up on the necklace long ago if he knew that it was worth nine billion dollars. There was too big of a gap between 900 million and nine billion; that single digit made all the difference. No one would spend that much money to buy such an expensive necklace.

That was why Jack would certainly give up on the Heart of the Abyss if she said that. It was way too expensive. Even someone from a second-class aristocratic family would have to think twice before buying it.

“Oh my. What a coincidence, Jack. What are you doing? Buying jewelry for your wife? A diamond ring, perhaps?”

At this moment, a young man walked in, a beautiful young woman in tow. Several bodyguards trailed behind them.

Jack immediately flashed a frosty smile when he recognized the intruder. It was Kelly, the young master of the Gold family, and Cecilia Taylor.

“I’m buying a necklace. What diamond ring? I’ll bring my wife over to pick it out herself when we’re both free!”

Jack replied, a mirthless smile twisting his lips.

“Take your time!”

Kelly guffawed before turning to another saleswoman. “Bring out all the expensive diamond rings here, as well as the bracelets and earrings and necklaces and whatnot. I want the entire set!”

“Thank you, dear!”

The smile on Cecilia's face brightened. She lifted her chin slightly, pride etched over her expression. "You're so nice to me, dear. Unlike someone else who doesn't have money and is too embarrassed to bring his wife over to pick out a ring. He's probably scared that she'll choose an expensive one, and he won't be able to bring himself to spend the money. It would be so shameful for him!"

"Really? Then I want to see how much your husband is willing to pay for you, exactly. You're going to wear them during your wedding, right? Aren't you afraid that no one would even attend your wedding, let alone someone to look at it when you wear it?"

Jack chuckled after he heard that, casually standing to the side and anticipating the jewelry they would pick out.

"You kidding me? I'm getting married. And what about you? You're just throwing a birthday party for your wife. You're the one who'll be crying then!"

Cecilia rolled her eyes at him, picking up a ring and slipping it onto her finger.

Chapter 770

"I like this, babe! Can I get it?" Cecilia asked.

"Of course. You're going to wear this on our wedding day. It's about 50 million dollars, and it's all worth it so long as you like it. Just buy!"

Kelly grinned.

"Oh, this necklace is so pretty. It's a little expensive. About 100 million dollars!"

Soon enough, Cecilia had her eyes set upon a gorgeous necklace. It was expensive, even compared to

the other items in the shop.

“It’s not expensive at all. It’s nothing. This necklace looks good. You’ll definitely be the brightest star on the wedding day while wearing this!”

Kelly laughed.

After a while, they chose quite a few pieces of jewelry. The bill totaled to over 300 million dollars.

They paid for the jewelry, then they noticed that Jack still had not bought anything. Cecilia smiled. “What’s wrong? You’re too shy to choose anything? Are you scared that we’ll laugh at you, saying that it’s too cheap? Didn’t you just win 90 million dollars from my man here? You should have quite a bit of money on you now. Furthermore, you have your own money, so you should have about 200 million in total. Yet you don’t dare to buy anything too expensive?”

Kelly went along with her and said, “don’t forget, my dear Cecilia, that he just boasted about throwing a birthday party that would rock the entire city. If he buys all this and spends hundreds of millions, he won’t have much left. He’s spending a lot of money already—reserving the hotel, stuff like that. That’s why he’s just buying all these jewelry as a mere token!”

Cecilia pretended a look of realization. “Oh, that’s right! I almost forgot. He won’t even be able to afford the banquet if he isn’t careful with his money. Or he won’t be able to afford a lavish meal. He’ll be a truly laughing stock then!”

She paused here before continuing leisurely, “Besides, no one pays that much attention to jewelry. So it’s enough to simply buy something that’s worth ten or twenty thousand!”

“That’s right. Let’s go, Cecilia. He’ll be too embarrassed to pick something out if we linger here. Let’s quickly go and get out of his hair. We’ll let this poor son-in-law choose some cheap stuff for his wife!”

Young Master Gold laughed. He came before Jack, looked down upon Jack with his head held high, before sauntering out of the store, along with Cecilia.

After they left, Jack only noticed that the saleswoman who had been ready to bring out a few items for him was giving him a strange look.

“So you’re that son-in-law!”

She gave a bitter smile. “It’s all right so long as you mean it. No need to compare yourself to those people!”

He gave a small smile when heard this. “Don’t worry. I’m not going to compare myself to trash like them. After all, a family like the Gold family has no right to compare themselves to me!”

“You talk big. But why don’t you actually pick something out?”

The saleswoman who had sold Cecilia her jewelry gave a cold smile from the side. “They don’t have the right to compare themselves to you? It sounds as though you’re richer than them. Then buy something! I want to see what you buy!”

Jack could not be bothered with her. He turned toward the first saleswoman. “I’m going to buy the Heart of the Abyss because my wife likes it—at least, I trust that she will like it. Besides, she’s the only woman who’s beautiful enough to wear it!”

The saleswoman was speechless. She gave a wry smile. “Sir, that friend of yours said that you only have 200 million dollars on you. The Heart of the Abyss is nine billion, not 900 million! You’ve verified that fact for yourself just now. More importantly, we have no intention of selling it!”

“Nine billion?”

Jack furrowed his brows. He thought about it for a while before speaking: "How about this? I'll pay 20 billion! I thought that it was worth 900 million, that's why I offered 2 billion. I never thought that I'd miss a zero there. Then allow me to add a zero to my offer as well. I'll buy it from you for 20 billion!"

"20 billion!" No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 771-775

Chapter 771

The saleswoman before him exchanged a glance with the plump saleswoman who had sneered upon Jack. They both took sharp intakes of breath.

"Sir, are—are you sure that you said 20 billion? Did I hear wrongly?"

The saleswoman gulped. She suspected that she was hallucinating.

"You didn't hear wrong. Your boss is a businessman. I don't care about how big your jewelry business is, but businessmen are out to make money. I know that you won't be able to make a decision as big as this. So why don't you call your superior and ask about it?"

Jack said after thinking about it.

"All right. I'll talk to our manager!"

The saleswoman rushed into the office and called the manager out.

Yet the manager was not able to call the shots either. He smiled at Jack. "Sir, we don't display the Heart of the Abyss outside. Instead, we keep it inside for safeguarding. I can't make the final decision, but

you're in luck. Our district manager who oversees for the Southwest district, so happens to be here. Please follow me, sir. I'll take you to see him."

"All right!"

Jack nodded his head.

He was quickly led into a tunnel by the manager. They wound their way in for a good few meters before the manager opened a heavy steel door. They entered the room.

A beauty in her thirties was lying on the couch. It was evident she was tired, and she was closing her eyes and resting.

"Manager Lowe, didn't I tell you to not disturb me if there isn't anything going on? We'll be putting the Heart of the Abyss on exhibition tomorrow. I've been meeting with the media, and I'm tired. I need a good rest today!"

The middle-aged woman wore a crisp white shirt, and she radiated a powerful aura. After she said that, she looked at Jack. "Why did you bring a man in?" she asked impatiently.

Jack ignored her. His attention was already pinned onto a necklace inside a glass casing that stood in the middle of the room. A jewel the color of dark blood was its crowning glory, and the other gemstones sparkling in its circumference made it seem even more otherworldly. It was magnificent.

"So this is the Heart of the Abyss. It's beautiful. No wonder it's selling for such a high price!"

He commented as he walked over and observed it.

"Hey! Who are you? Who told you that you could just waltz in here? Don't you dare get close to the

Abyss!”

The beauty shot up to her feet and gave Jack a warning glare. This was an extremely expensive item. What if he was up to no good?

“Manager Lynch, this customer wishes to buy the Heart of the Abyss. That’s why I brought him in!”

Store Manager Lowe explained to the district manager.

Jack also studied Manager Lynch. He could tell that she was no ordinary woman. Judging from her eyes and her taut, yet relaxed position, she was probably a good fighter.

“We’re not selling!”

Manager Lynch relaxed a little after she heard that. “Manager Lowe, it’s not like you don’t know that there’s only one of its kind in the world. This is our crown jewel, and we use it specially for publicity. We’re just bringing it here for an exhibition. I may be the district manager of the Southwest, but even I can’t do much. Besides, this item is not for sale!”

Chapter 772

“I’m sorry, sir, but we’re not selling this. Our manager was not clear about this. I apologize for wasting your precious time!”

It was evident that the beautiful manager before him was slightly unhappy, but she knew that not any person could think of buying the Heart of the Abyss. That was why she flashed a radiant smile at Jack.

“Ma’am, this man here is offering us 20 billion dollars. That’s why I wanted to ask you about this. He’s offering a huge sum. What if the people up top consider selling it? I was afraid that you would pin the blame on me if we missed the opportunity!”

Store Manager Lowe's eyes flickered toward Manager Lynch's. He spoke hesitantly.

"20 billion?"

Naturally, Manager Lynch was surprised when she heard this number. Her lips parted. This man was offering too much.

This was just a necklace. Was it worth it to spend that much money on it?

The necklace was very beautiful though. Any woman would like it.

"Can you make the decision, Manager Lynch?"

Jack gave a wan smile. "I simply must obtain this necklace!" he added.

"I—I'll ask the boss at our headquarters. I'll immediately video call him!"

Manager Lynch gulped and whipped her phone out. She immediately video called her boss.

"Miss Lynch, why are you video calling me? We're going to put the Heart of the Abyss on display tomorrow. Make sure that you perform your bodyguard duties well, all right? We cannot afford a single mistake!"

An old man with frazzled hair sat on the other end of the line. He chuckled as he spoke, and he looked very approachable.

“Boss, we have a customer here who wants to buy the Heart of the Abyss...”

Manager Lynch looked at Jack, who stood behind her. She angled the phone so that he appeared on the screen as well.

The smile on the old man’s face instantly hardened. “Miss Lynch, the Abyss is worth nine billion, but didn’t I say that its value is worth far more than that?” he answered. “There’s only one of its kind in the entire world. Besides, the Heart of the Abyss is our treasure. It’s not for sale. We won’t be able to find anything to replace it anytime soon. More importantly, this is what we use to promote our store!”

Manager Lynch reacted quickly, as though she understood something. “So what you’re saying is that the Heart of the Abyss holds unparalleled value, right, Boss? Including the advertisements and being our signature product!”

The old man nodded his head. He smiled towards Jack. “First of all, sir, I thank you very much for showing interest in our products, and for admiring the Heart of the Abyss so much. But we cannot simply sell this to you...”

Manager Lynch pondered for a while, then she cut in before the old man could finish his sentence: “But this man is offering us 20 billion dollars, Boss. Are you sure you don’t want to consider his offer?”

The old man on the phone creased his brows, obviously considering the offer.

After a while, he gave a bitter smile. “I’m sorry, sir...”

Jack realized that 20 billion was not enough to persuade the old man, considering how he rejected the offer.

“30 billion!”

Jack took a step forward and told the old man.

The old man was taken aback for a moment. "Sir, you're really making this difficult for us. There is implicit value in that necklace..."

"40 billion!"

Jack offered again.

"But..."

The old man was growing speechless...

"50 billion!"

Chapter 773

Jack was too tired to continue with the negotiation drama. The sign of hesitation plastered on the other party's face grew more and more obvious, it meant this 'Heart of the Abyss' was truly not ordinary jewelry.

Besides, to Jack, 50 billion dollars was nothing.

"Are...are you sure? 50 billion?"

The boss was visibly elated with the price.

“boss, do I look like I’m joking?”

Jack loosened a chuckle in return.

“You have the deal!”

“We thank you so much for choosing our ‘Heart of The Abyss’. I, on behalf of Daxia Jewel, am willing to give away 200 million dollars worth of other jewelry for you to choose!” The boss added excitedly.

“Wow! Just about right! I need to purchase some diamond rings and earrings too!”

Jack’s mood lightened, letting out joyous laughter.

“Glad to be doing business with you!”

“Me too!”

The boss hung up the video call on his mobile phone. He was ostensibly elated for customers like Jack—generous and magnanimous. It was his first time in his lifetime encountering such a customer.

When the commoners purchased pieces of jewelry in their shop, the most frequent question they asked was if there were any discounts or free gifts.

Meanwhile, this guy did not even ask for a discount nor gift but instead raised the price, billions by billions. If they were not the ones dealing with Jack today, they would not believe such a customer existed. It would be extremely hard to believe that this was true.

“Sir...sir, do you really mean it?”

The good-looking manager asked in a trembling tone, her hands shaking. For a person who was able to shout out 50 billion dollars in such a casual manner, his net-worth must be at least a trillion, perhaps even more.

Furthermore, this man’s whole being was sharp, he was standing straight, and firm and his eyes shot out a ray of perseverance, which made her feel that this man before him must be a veteran who had just returned from the military. This was because an ordinary man would not have such a unique aura and temperament.

“Pay with a card?”

A credit card coated completely with predominant golden color was presented before the manager. Jack chuckled and gestured to her to take the card.

The first thought that came into Manager Lynch’s mind was that this card was privileged and elite, though she had not seen this type of card before. She bobbed her head frantically and then turned to the store manager, “Quickly get the POS machine over, and I will pack up the ‘Heart of the Abyss’ for this gentleman!”

“All right!”

The female store manager flashed a warm smile and left the private room.

Few lines appeared between Jack’s brows; a strange feeling stirred within him. Why did not Manager Lynch pack up the necklace for him first and then went out to swipe the card together? After all, he still had to leave the room and pick the other jewels.

Never did he expect, once the store manager left the room, Manager Lynch shot him a few alluring

gazes while packing up the 'Heart of the Abyss'. Then she slowly leaned towards Jack and breathed out slowly, "Dear Sir, can I have your Twitter account? In the future, if Daxia Jewel produces or stocks in some fine accessories, I could send you some photos!"

Jack's face sunk in the next second; he was speechless. It seemed like the way he raised the price just now had made this good-looking district manager's heart beating fast.

Although the salary for such an executive was certainly not close to low, in the face of such a generous and manly Jack, she was somewhat moved and unable to resist his personal charm.

Jack flashed a wan smile, "I don't normally come to these jewelry shops. I bought this necklace for my wife!"

Jack was hinting to the other party that he was married. As long as the other party was not a fool, she would not press further on the matter of Twitter.

After Manager Lynch had packed up the necklace, she handed it over to Jack, her eyes were completely filled with amorous colors. "It's just adding friends on Twitter. Don't tell me you're scared of a lady like me?"

As she spoke, she caressed Jack's hand while handing the jewelry box over. Her tone was provocative and suggestive.

Chapter 774

However, Jack admitted that the manager before him was indeed gorgeous and charming, no matter her temperament or her body figure. Those eyes of her were even more seductive yet captivating. If Jack were the other ordinary man, he would have fallen into her erotic trap.

He grabbed the box and smiled indifferently, "I don't think this is necessary. After all, our house is not very far from here. If I'm in need of buying any jewelry, I can just drop by here and see!"

Signs of disappointment flashed in Manager Lynch's eyes; she was disheartened at Jack's words. A dirty trick suddenly popped up in her mind and then she pretended to twist her ankle and fell into Jack's embrace. "Ah!"

Jack's immediate reflex was to support her from falling further and helped her to stabilize. "Are you alright?"

"I'm sorry, I'm so sorry! These high heels are too high and uncomfortable. I nearly tripped because of them!"

Manager Lynch's face was kissed pink, and she was tongue-tied at the situation. She had already acted so proactively, and yet Jack did not show any hint of being attracted! It seemed like Jack was truly not interested in other women, even a beauty like her.

She had never behaved in such a sultry and dirty way; she did not budge in the slightest in front of any other average wealthy people, even looked down upon them. After all, she had always been a conservative person, and coupled with her high academic qualification and salary, she would naturally have an eye for a perfect man like Jack.

Many filthy rich young masters had been wanting to hook her up, but none of them succeeded as she did not give them any chance. Today, this man before her was not only good-looking and with a benevolent temperament, but also his manly behaviors had captivated her, especially during the moment he raised the price billions by billions. Money to him was nothing but stacks of toilet papers—he did not care at all. Such a man had completely fascinated her.

Besides, this was also her first time being so proactive in pleasing a man. She wanted to be conquered by this man; she wanted to become his proudest trophy.

However, this man did not even bother to spare her a gaze.

“Sir, please swipe your card with this POS machine. Also, our boss has informed us that you still have 200 million dollars for the other jewels. I will show you the way later!”

Store Manager Lowe entered the private room with a POS machine in her hand. She quickly let Jack make the payment.

“Manager Lynch, I’m sorry for interrupting your break time. I’ll follow Manager Lowe to pick some other necklace and ring!”

Jack gave a faint smile and went out of the room with Store Manager Lowe.

The awkward smile on Manager Lynch’s face disappeared in the next second the two left. She closed the door feebly, feeling a little lost. Her eyes turned towards the direction of the place where the Heart of The Abyss was once placed, and her heart sank deeply.

“Oh ya! Manager Lowe, I need a favor from you. There’s something I need you to pass on to Manager Lynch in a while!”

After choosing the ring, earrings, and bracelet, Jack quickly thought of something and turned to Store Manager Lowe. “Could you help me to pass on this message to her? That the Heart of The Abyss has already been sold to me, and you won’t be able to exhibit it tomorrow! Hence please announce to the public that it has been sold. As for the fact that I bought it for 50 billion dollars, I hope this can remain a secret. Could you please help?”

“Do you mean we keep the 50 billion dollars as a secret?”

Store Manager Lowe was stunned at Jack’s request. “Sir, if we announce that the necklace was sold for 50 billion dollars, wouldn’t it be great for you in front of your friend and family? Sir, you’re too low profile!”

'this is not about me being low profile. If my wife knew that I've spent 50 billion for a 9 billion worth necklace, she would scold me! She will say that I squander hard-earn money.

Jack explained in a casual tone, a warm smile showing on his face.

A flash of enlightenment, at the same time, a flicker of envy stirred within Store Manager Lowe when she heard his explanation. "I'm envious of your wife! You're so willing to spend money on her and consider everything for her!"

"By the way, if you and Manager Lynch are available on that day, feel free to come to my wife's birthday party!" Jack chuckled.

Chapter 775

"No way! Are you serious? We can come too?"

Jack's invitation elevated Store Manager Lowe's mood that she almost jumped for joy. A birthday party by a big shot was the sweetest dream that one could have! Besides, those who would be attending the party were definitely not ordinary people. They must have possessed certain statuses in Eastfield.

"Absolutely! Just come over empty-handed and tell the guards that you got my permission!"

After giving some thought to the matter, Jack showed another warm smile and then left the shop.

"Wait. That's not quite right. Isn't he only the adopted son-in-law? Can a son-in-law have so much money?"

After Jack exited the door, Store Manager Lowe, who had finally calmed down, thought of something and yelled in surprise. "This fella is too low profile. 50 billion for a necklace? Just wow! No wonder he promised to give his wife a birthday party that will shake the whole Eastfield. He's so damn rich!"

The first thing that Jack did once he arrived at home was to hide the Heart of the Abyss, only then he went to search for his wife.

At this time, Selena was strolling leisurely in the garden.

As soon as she saw Jack approaching her, she shot him a blank look. "Jack White! You disappeared early in the morning! Where did you go, huh?"

Jack let out adorable giggles, extended his hands into his pockets, and pulled out several boxes. "Look, your birthday is around the corner. So I went out to buy you some nice accessories!"

"What? How could you go without me? Are you trying to surprise me?"

Inside Selena's reprimand, hid a hint of happiness; a giggly smile plastered on her face. She took one of the boxes and opened it. "Did you purchase in Daxia Juwel? Their accessories are exorbitantly expensive. Here, look, there're gems on it, it must be expensive, right? And all these things added up must have cost you a lot!"

Jack smiled lightly, "It's not expensive, it's merely over nine million!"

"What the heck? Over nine million dollars, and yet you said it's not expensive?"

Selena almost fainted at the number. Few lines formed between her brows, and she started to nag in a firmer tone, "No, dear, no! Your act is called impulsive purchase! You're basically squandering money. Both of us don't have a job right now and yet you spent so much money on these. If everyone in our house spends like you do, what do you think will happen to our savings? Even if you've won 10 billion in billiards, you shouldn't squander like this!"

Nonetheless, these reprimands of Selena's are like sunshine flooded into Jack's chest—he felt warm and elated. He wrapped his arms around Selena and pulled her into his embrace. "You silly. This is our first birthday celebration together, I'd break my bank for it!"

"Hey, hey, let me go. Others are watching!"

Contentment filled her heart as her face turned rosy pink.

"Jack White, you stupid brat. You're so heroic, huh? I just got to know that you've beaten Young Master Drake up! Are you trying to dig a grave for yourself?"

At this time, Fiona returned from her shopping and started to yell at Jack as soon as she spotted Jack in the garden.

"Mother, yes, I did beat him up. I went to Drake's residence last night. And that's because he deserves it. As for the reason why I hit him, you don't have to worry anymore. I've already settled it!"

Jack smiled dryly and admitted the deed without hesitation.

"Get out from our house, now! You've offended the Drake family, aren't you having a death wish? I don't even bother to find out why you beat him up, it must be because he fired you and Selena, and you feel displeased with his action! But you can't hit people because of that either!"

Fiona pointed at the gate, gave him a dismissive wave of her hands, yelling Jack to get out.No. 1
Supreme Warrior

Chapter 776-780

Chapter 776

"The heck are you talking about, Ma? Young Master Drake deserved a beating. Anyway, what's over is

over. I don't think Jack did anything wrong. He helped me to release my anger—that's why he beat Young Master Drake up!"

Selena was extremely angry when she heard what her mother said. She snarled at Fiona.

"I wouldn't want that to happen to you either, Selena. But he's from the Drake family. Offending them is like signing your death certificate!"

Fiona was truly worried.

"What's going on, Ma?"

Ben and Andrew walked out and asked, their expressions furrowed in concern.

Fiona released a sigh and shot Jack a vicious glare. "I just heard that this fellow had gone and beaten the young master of the Drake family up," she explained to Ben. "Isn't it infuriating? I heard that Young Master Drake is still being hospitalized, and his condition is uncertain!"

"No way. Weren't you being a little brash, Jack? We understand why you spoke against him in the first place—you did it for the billion dollars, right? Even if speaking against him would mean embarrassing him in front of everyone. And of course, Young Master Drake did go overboard by firing Selena as well!"

Andrew stepped forward, his brows drawing together. "But it's too much, isn't it, beating up a young master just because of that?" he continued, "They even offered the two of you jobs in the first place. They're stronger than some first-class aristocratic families. Aren't you afraid that they'll destroy the entire Taylor family?"

"That's right!"

Fiona interjected immediately, "So shouldn't we chase him out now? He invited disaster upon himself. He shouldn't drag us into it!"

Ben spoke up after thinking for a while, "Ma, it's true that Jack was being rash, but he did lash out for Selena's sake. We don't have much choice now. The past is all in the past. All of us should just leave together. I think James Drake won't let us off that easily no matter what we say since his son has been beaten up. We can't just single Jack out. The rest of us won't be able to escape either!"

"That's right. Why don't we all leave together? It hurts my heart to think of leaving this villa, but we can bring our valuables along with us. Most of our money is in the bank anyway that can be easily accessed with our cards!"

Fiona instantly suggested, realizing that Ben's words made sense.

"Don't be afraid, Father, Mother. They won't come to us looking for trouble!"

Jack flashed a bitter smile as he watched everyone fly into panic mode. "Think about it. I brought Selena along last night and caused a ruckus for them. They would have done something about it yesterday if they really wanted to retaliate. Furthermore, it's already this late into the morning, but they haven't sent anyone over. Do you really think they'll come? If you do, wouldn't they be scared that we would take off sooner?"

Realization dawned upon Ben when he heard Jack's words. "You're right. If they really wanted to find trouble with us, they probably would have done so yesterday night or this morning. They wouldn't have waited until now."

"Hmm. That's true..."

Andrew also seemed to realize that the idea made sense.

“But I really think that the Drake family won’t let us off so easily. It’s possible that they prioritized sending Young Master Drake to the hospital because he was so badly injured. Maybe they’ve already sealed off all the roads leading out of the city. We probably won’t even have a chance to escape. They’ll come for us once their young master has fully recovered!”

Fiona was still fearful—to the point that her imagination began to run wild.

“Ma, all this actually happened because Young Master Drake tried to take advantage of me. He was a little drunk last night when he came into the office, and he tried to get all touchy. Jack only beat him up after he knew about this! I believe that even the Drake family themselves would think that this was rational. Besides, Jack is so strong. It’s likely they won’t cause trouble for us!”

Selena cast a side-glance at Jack, then she explained everything in his place. She did not want him to bear the responsibility alone.

“What? That Young Master Drake actually tried to...”

Only then did Fiona understand that Jack had beaten Young Master Drake up for other reasons, and not because of the job-related incident.

Chapter 777

She gave Jack a long look. “All right. I wrongfully accused you just now,” she said. “I thought you had gone and beaten the young master up because of what happened to Selena and your job. You really do have a valid reason for beating him up then, if that had happened!”

“Ma, how did you know about this anyway?”

Selena asked Fiona after she thought about it.

“Oh, I overheard a few people gossiping about it when I was out shopping. It gave me such a scare that I immediately rushed back!”

Fiona patted her chest, but she was still anxious as she thought about it. “But what if the Drake family lashes against us in secret, instead of broad daylight? That will be even harder to prevent. I really think that we should all just stay at home and not go out at all!”

“No way, Mom. I’ve just opened my cybercafé. I need to make sure that everything’s running smoothly for these few days, especially when we’re getting so many customers!”

Ben spoke with a smile, “I trust what Jack said. If he says that they fear him, they fear him. They would have come looking for us a long time ago otherwise.”

“No way. It’s not like we lack the money from your cybercafe business. I won’t be able to live on if you ever die!”

Fiona did not dare to allow Ben out alone.

“Elaine, take a few of the other bodyguards and follow me!”

Ben waved Elaine and a few other bodyguards over; they had been standing at the side.

“You won’t worry if I’m going out like this. Right, Mom?”

After Elaine and the others walked over, Ben said to Fiona, grinning.

“Fine. Go on then!”

Fiona waved her hand helplessly.

...

“Master, Master! Good news!”

At this moment, a man from the Eagle clan ran over to Master Neuman, smiling.

“What’s going on? You seem excited!”

Lee asked, smiling bitterly.

“Good news. I heard that Young Master Drake has fired Jack and his wife, and the young master tried to make a move with the wife. So Jack brought his wife to the Drake family’s residence and beat the living sh*t out of Timothy Drake. He’s still in the hospital now!”

The middle-aged man grinned as he reported everything.

Lee’s eyes immediately brightened when he heard that. He quickly leaped to his feet. “Really? Fantastic! This way, we won’t have to act so fast for now. We’ll wait and watch what happens. Offending the Drake family is practically digging your own grave. Let’s see if the Drake family helps us to get rid of that little punk.”

“Of course the Drake family would do something. James Drake has only one son, after all!”

The middle-aged man said, smiling.

“Mmhmm. Seems like the gods are smiling upon me!”

Lee lifted his chin ever so slightly, his gaze filled with excitement.

Chapter 778

“Tell everyone that we’re halting operations for now! We’ll wait and see how the situation is after two days!”

In a flash, Lee’s good humor had been restored. It would be fantastic if the Drake family were to kill Jack off. He would not have to do a single thing then.

“Fantastic. Absolutely fantastic.”

...

Ken Clark was excited as well. He guffawed as he came before Ivan, Neil, and Xena before taking a seat.

“What’s going on, Young Master Clark? Looks like you’re excited about something!”

Ivan flashed a mirthless smile. He had finally recovered from his injuries, and he could return to the Taylor family’s residence. He also thought about introducing Xena to his family sometime during the next few days.

When he thought about the expressions on Ben’s and the others’ faces, delight jolted in him.

“Jack has gone looking for trouble again. He really doesn’t quit playing with fire.”

Ever since Young Master Clark had stepped foot into the coffee shop, he did not stop grinning. "I think we won't need to create trouble for him anymore. He has signed a death wish for himself now."

"What? Really? Who did he offend this time?"

Neil immediately knew that Jack had gone and offended someone else again when he heard that. After he thought about it, his eyes brightened. "Don't tell me he's offended a first-class aristocratic family this time? Now that punk isn't afraid of us. But he'll be in big trouble if he offended a first-class aristocratic family!"

He did not expect Ken to shake his head. The latter earnestly tapped his index finger against the table. "He didn't offend a first-class aristocratic family this time, but the Drake family!"

A frosty smile spread across Ivan's lips as he registered the words. "You're joking, Young Master Clark. Jack has good relations with the Drake family, especially since he's constantly by Miss Tanya's side after he was hired as their bodyguard. He's constantly shadowing her, and they're pretty much good friends. Why would Jack offend them? He's not an idiot!"

"It's all because of the billion dollars! That punk's head must have been high at the prospect of that much money!"

Ken laughed. Then he told everyone about what he had heard in detail.

"So that's what happened. He just pretended that he did not know how to play billiards and swindled Young Master Turner of one billion dollars. Tsk. Leo's probably really good in billiards. No one would believe Jack if he claimed that he had just picked it up. It's obvious that he's good in the sport if he was able to beat Leo!"

"No wonder Young Master Drake could not suffer the sight any longer. So he helped to speak up, saying that Jack had gone mad for insisting on a billion dollars because he wanted money. And he didn't spare Young Master Drake's reputation! That was probably why Young Master Drake was so angry that he

went looking for Selena Taylor!”

Ivan gave a wry smile and took a sip out of his cup of coffee. “Ah. What a pity. I had hoped that Jack would embarrass himself to no end during Selena’s birthday party and that he would just curdle out of shame. Who knew that he won’t be living for more than a few days now!”

Xena, who was sitting beside him, thought about it for a while. “But Jack is the son-in-law of the Taylor family, Ivan,” she said, anxiety laced in her tone. “Won’t the Drake family retaliate against the Taylor family as well in a moment of anger?”

Ivan furrowed his brows at the idea. “I don’t think so. We didn’t offend them. Besides, Jack and his family have never lived with us before. James is a reasonable man. They would suffer plenty of losses if they really tried to fight us, especially since Jack is a good fighter.”

Right at this moment, a phone rang out.

Ivan gestured for everyone to remain silent before picking up the phone, getting onto his feet.

His expression darkened as the call went on. “F*ck. Jack is really dragging our entire family through the dirt!”

“What’s wrong, Ivan?”

Xena quickly asked.

Chapter 779

She was a little worried. What if Young Master Drake suffered from serious injuries and his father was absolutely furious? It would be troublesome if they acted against Ivan and the others.

It was a small possibility, but it could not be completely ruled out.

Besides, it had not been easy for her to become Ivan's girlfriend. It would be extremely unfair if she were to be dragged into this and get killed along with everyone else. She would not even get a chance to enjoy her life for a short period of time! She could not let that happen.

"The Drake family called to inform us that we're officially withdrawn from the Southern Hills development project. And they won't give us any compensation for breaking the contract!"

Ivan gave a bitter smile. "The old man is super angry right now. He's calling a meeting for all members of the family."

As he spoke, his eyes suddenly lit up. "Let's go then. There's no time like the present. Come with me, Xena. Since the old man has called all the Taylor family members for the meeting, I'm sure that Selena, Jack, and even Ben will be there. Since they're all there, I'll introduce you to everyone then. I'll let them know that you're my girlfriend!"

Xena furrowed her brows. "Is—is it appropriate to tell them about me now?"

"Of course it is!"

Ivan splayed his arms. "Everyone will be there. If I introduce you and everyone knows that you're my girlfriend, Jack won't kill you off just like that, right? It wouldn't do if the Taylor family found out. After all, I'm their cousin! It'll be insurance for your life, announcing this. If I don't announce it, what if Jack secretly kills you to exact revenge for Ben? What if he says that he didn't know you were my girlfriend?"

After Xena heard that, she too, thought that it made sense. She nodded her head. "All right then. I'll go with you. But I'm not prepared for this. I'm so nervous. I didn't even bring any gifts!"

Ivan took her hand. "No need to buy anything. I'm just going to introduce you because this meeting

happened to be now. Don't worry. I'm here!"

"Ah, I would go over and see the look on Ben's face if I actually had a reason for going."

Ken burst into laughter.

"Don't worry, Young Master Taylor. Old Man Taylor will certainly be angry because of how the Drake family had canceled all their plans, but it's not your fault. It's all because Jack beat Young Master Drake up. That's why the person to be reprimanded will naturally be Jack. The old man will give him thorough hiding!"

Neil flashed a cold smile as he spoke.

"That's right. I didn't do anything wrong. Nothing to be worried about!"

Smiling, Ivan brought Xena out.

Jack and Ben and the others also received calls. They all went to the largest hall in the Taylor family's villa.

There were plenty of couches and stools all around. The Taylor family would use this space to discuss important matters whenever they cropped up.

At this moment, Old Man Taylor's expression looked grim. The people around him all dipped their heads as well. The atmosphere was thick and heavy.

The doors gradually opened. Selena, Jack, and the others strode in.

“Hmph!”

Old Man Taylor harrumphed when he saw Jack. It was clear that he was furious.

“Grandpa, is there something wrong? Why did you summon us over?”

Selena managed an awkward smile, asking tentatively. During the call earlier, Cecilia simply told them to come over and admit their mistakes, huffing angrily. She did not speak about the entire situation.

Chapter 780

“What’s wrong? What’s wrong! Of course, that hotheaded husband of yours went and caused trouble again!”

At this moment, Ivan walked in with Xena, a humorless smile on his lips.

“Ivan, why did you bring her here? Isn’t she Ben’s girlfriend?”

Theodore could not help but furrow his brows when he saw his son walking in with Xena.

Ivan gave a wry smile. He cast Ben a purposeful look before speaking, “Yes, Xena was Ben’s girlfriend. But he’s useless. He’s already in his twenties, but he’s still a good-for-nothing. Of course, Xena would want a more established man!”

Here, he smiled at the audience and introduced her, “Everyone, this is Xena Jackson, and she’s my girlfriend. And we’re a match made in heaven.”

Ben’s expression soured, and redness limned his eyes although he was well aware that Xena was a cruel and horrible person. A woman like her was not even worthy of his affections, but he had been with her

for a long time. His heart still ached when he saw her.

“Oh. So she’s your girlfriend now? Congratulations! It’s only right that a beauty is paired with a prince, instead of some neet who only knows how to play video games all day. It would be a miracle if the girlfriend of someone like that didn’t run off!”

Cecilia spoke sardonically after she heard that, folding her arms across her chest.

“One man’s trash is another man’s treasure. Of course, there would be someone willing to pick up what Ben sees as trash. Birds of a feather flock together, after all!”

Jack gave a mirthless chuckle when he heard that. “But those who keep money-minded women will live to regret their decision!”

“That’s right. I’ve never seen such a shameless person in my life!”

Selena also huffed angrily, furious in place of her brother.

“You...you’re saying that we’re shameless? That we’re trash?”

Ivan was furious now. He took a step forward and glared at Jack.

However, he quickly thought of something, and his anger quickly dissipated. Instead, he gave a wry smile. “Jack, not sure if you’ve been feeling kind of weak lately?”

Jack was going to die after ten more days. What use was there in arguing with a person who was sentenced to death?

Jack was stunned. He immediately knew what Ivan meant when he said that. The other man was trying to pry and see if he had taken the poison, and if there were obvious symptoms now.

He wore a surprised expression on purpose. "That's right. I've been a little out of it lately as if my limbs are weak. But what does it have to do with you?" he said to Ivan. "Isn't it normal to feel lethargic during the summer?"

Ivan's heart was delighted when he heard Jack admitting to that. Still, he maintained his composure as he said, "You look like you could use some rest. That's why I asked!"

"Enough! I wanted to have a meeting to speak about certain matters, not for the both of you to argue!"

At last, Old Man Taylor snapped impatiently.

He waited until everyone have quiet down before speaking, looking at Jack as he did so. "Jack, do you know what your brash decision of beating Young Master Drake up has cost us? Do you know the losses the Taylor family will suffer?" No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 781-785

Chapter 781

"You've got some guts, Jack, beating the young master of the Drake family like that. I think you should just get out of the Taylor family. Stop dragging us along with you!"

One of the Taylor family members huffed angrily.

"That's right. That's Young Master Drake we're talking about, Jack. Sure, you offended some young master of a second-class aristocratic family before, but we wanted to preserve our family's reputation plus you're a good fighter, and you are friends with the Goddess of War. We wouldn't want to cause you trouble so long as you didn't overstep your boundaries. But you took this for granted. Now you're so wanton, daring enough to hurt Young Master Drake!"

Another family member was furious as well. He was afraid that all of them would be dragged into the matter because of Jack's action.

Fiona gave an awkward smile as she stepped forward. "Don't worry, Grandpa Taylor. Nothing will happen," she said to Old Man Taylor. "Jack had a good reason for beating Young Master Drake. It's not just because the young master fired him and Selena. That man wanted to take advantage of our Selena, and Jack was absolutely livid when he knew about this. That's why he beat that man up!"

Here, Fiona pounded her chest. "But don't worry. We definitely won't bring the Taylor family into this," she promised. "The Drake family won't simply murder the innocents, right? The most they'll do is kill our family!"

"You really know how to talk, Fiona!"

Theodore chuckled. "You're not even part of the Drake family. How would you know that the Drake family won't lash out against us in a fit of anger?"

In reality, Fiona was not sure of herself as well. At this moment though, she could not give in. "It's simple. They would have created a lot of trouble earlier if they had wanted to do so. Jack had beaten that man up yesterday morning, and it's already noon the next day now. But I don't see the Drake family's people coming over. So they definitely won't come over. After all, Jack has a good relationship with Miss Tanya!"

"No way!"

Ivan interjected immediately, "He's the young master of the Drake family. They have so many good fighters. How can they just let this slide? I really think that the best thing to do now is to surrender Jack to the Drake family. Make him kowtow and admit his mistakes and ask for forgiveness!"

"Why am I the one who should kowtow and ask for forgiveness when he's the one who tried to touch

my wife? Are you kidding me, Ivan Taylor? Do you think I'd do something like that?"

Jack chuckled, his expression nonchalant. "It's best if they don't come over. If they do, I'll kill off every single one who steps in!"

"You said it yourself!"

Old Man Taylor looked straight at Jack. "Since you were the one who caused this mess in the first place, I hope that you'll be able to bear the mistake yourself when the Drake family comes. Don't drag the Taylor family into this!"

"Don't worry. I won't!"

Jack promised.

"You won't? Grandpa, he's already dragged us into this. The Drake family isn't cooperating with us anymore. Southern Hill Real Estate was a huge project, and they don't want to collaborate anymore. We didn't earn anything this time instead we made huge losses!"

Ivan was extremely furious. He shot a glare at Jack. "You damn idiot. Did you really think that you didn't drag us through the dirt?"

"Ah. Nevermind. We've suffered huge losses, but Young Master Drake had disrespected Selena by trying to touch her. He deserved to be beaten up!"

Old Man Taylor heaved a sigh. "We simply lost a hundred million just like that. It's a huge blow to the Taylor family, but we won't starve to death," he said. "I just pray that the Drake family won't come looking for us, out of consideration of the friendship they had with Jack!"

Right at this moment, a bodyguard of the Taylor family rushed in. "Master, we've just got the news!" he breathed excitedly. "Young Master Drake only suffered minor injuries. There won't be any complications!"

Chapter 782

After knowing that Jack had beaten up Young Master Drake, the first thing the Taylor family naturally did was to send out their bodyguards to inquire about the situation.

Old Master Taylor heaved a huge sigh of relief upon learning that Young Master Drake only suffered a minor injury. Since the wound was not serious, perhaps Master Drake would not be so upset with them and make a huge fuss out of it. At most, he would find a hitman to slit Jack's throat, after all, others were not involved.

"Thank God, it's only a minor injury. Thank God!"

Old Master Taylor plonked down onto the armchair; everyone could see that the boulder in his heart was lifted.

Selena and Jack exchanged glances and hints of dismay were obviously displayed in their gazes.

The kick from Jack yesterday was not feeble at all. His kick was so powerful that Young Master Drake passed out the next second.

It was impossible for his injury to be mild and most likely, he would be impotent from that kick.

Nevertheless, Jack and Selena were no fool, it was obviously a beautiful white lie that the Drake family had spread. Since they were covering the truth, it meant that Master Drake was a sensible person, or at least he was smart that he should not make a hoo-ha out of this.

“But, Grandpa, though Young Master Drake was only mildly injured, the South Hill Real Estate project is now down the drain. The Drake family won’t allow us to continue with the project anymore. Who will make up for the losses?”

Ivan could feel raw anger boiling in his blood knowing that Jack was the culprit for the huge loss. He could not just let this b*stard off the hook; he desired to find a way to cast him out of the Taylor family.

“I’ll pay for the loss!”

However, to everyone’s surprise, Jack stepped forward and proclaimed aloud. “Isn’t it just a hundred million or so? I’ll pay!”

“Hmph! Don’t be ridiculous! Have you thought about it? What money are you gonna use to pay? The billion you won from Young Master Turner? Don’t forget you’ve promised to hold a party that will shake the entire Eastfield for your dearest wife!”

Ivan’s face immediately lit up at Jack’s words. Since this b*stard wanted to pretend to be some tycoon and offered to make up for the losses, why not?

“Jack, what nonsense are you spewing about? You and Selena are both jobless now! How can you afford to take up such responsibility?”

Fiona nearly had a heart attack and her eyes rolled to the back of her brain when she heard what Jack had said. She immediately pulled Jack back to her side as she reprimanded.

“Indeed, he should be responsible for this loss! If it wasn’t for him, this big project would not have flush down the drain just like that!”

Theodore immediately chimed in with a serious and firm tone. “Since the loss was caused by Jack, it’s natural for him to pay for it!”

“Yes. They’re right! Selena’s birthday doesn’t have to be grand, just a few confetti, wines and pizzas will do. It’ll be Cecelia’s wedding on that day anyway, the whole Taylor family probably don’t have spare time to celebrate with Selena. Oh ya! You really don’t even have to prepare a lot of food, since all the big shots and local authorities will attend Cecelia’s wedding.”

Cecelia’s mother echoed as she stepped forward.

Fiona was burning with anger that her eyes were like two fireballs that could burn Jack into ashes anytime. This brat clearly did not bring his brain along with him today, otherwise, how could he spew such nonsense?

Since Jack and her daughter were both jobless, Jack, perhaps, only had a couple of millions left. And the 90 million dollars that Jack won from Kelly Gold in gambling had been given to Fiona as well. Now, the issue was about the loss amounting to 100 million dollars and this brat had actually said that he would bear it.

Old Master Taylor nodded in agreement after giving the matter some thoughts. “Jack, this is indeed your fault and since you’ve said you’d be responsible, then you should transfer 100 million dollars to the company’s account!”

“Hmmm. You’re right. It’s indeed something I should pay for!”

Jack bobbed his head and asked for the company’s account number from the butler, which then he transferred 100 million dollars over.

Seeing that Jack was such a responsible man, there was a hint of respect shown in Old Master Taylor’s eyes. The anger that was swirling inside him a moment ago had dissipated now.

“All right. Since Young Master Drake did not suffer a major injury, I hope they won’t continue to look for trouble. But Jack, if they do come to avenge Young Master Drake, I hope that you’ll step up and bear the

consequences. Don't drag us down this abyss!"

"Don't be preoccupied, Grandpa Taylor. They won't dare to come, and if they really do, they're practically digging their own graves."

Chapter 783

Jack chuckled in return. His words made the crowd rendered speechless.

This freaking snob had become more and more braggy. The other party was the Drake family; not some other small shrimps, and he actually dared to say such a thing.

Jack and the others went back to their home not long after.

The next two or three days, the Taylor family were living in a state of fear; whenever any of the Taylors went out, it was necessary to bring along dozens of bodyguards.

While in Jack's villa, Fiona did not let Jack and Selena out at all cost; everyone must stay at home.

After two more days had passed and there were no signs of the Drake family then Fiona felt a huge relief. It seemed like the Drake family was not planning to avenge Young Master Drake.

...

"Hell no!"

The head of Eagle Clan—Lee Neuman—who had waited for several days for an explosive battle between the Drakes and Jack, was tongue-tied at the current situation. How could he have imagined that the episode of Jack beating up Young Master Drake would be settled in such a perfunctory manner?

Although the Drake family had announced that it was only a mild injury, Timothy was the young master of the Drake family after all. How could the Drakes swallow this anger?

In the end, the outcome was only that the Drake family had discontinued the South Hill Real Estate contract with the Taylor family. Nothing else other than that.

“James Drake, such a coward! He’s really...”

Lee was speechless for a while. He initially had planned to use James Drake to get rid of Jack, but he had never expected that the Drakes were such cowards!

“Master, I think it’d be better for us to follow the original plan. James Drake is a meticulous and careful man. And since the Young Master Drake was only mildly injured, and since the other party does not want to pursue further, we basically can’t do anything!”

The middle-aged man looked at Lee and spoke.

“Right. It looks like that’s the only way to go!”

Lee balled his fists firmly and responded.

“We’ve to capture a few men from the Green Sky Hall. Once Jack kills our men, we’ll kill those men as well! Only that way we can frame the Green Sky Hall for the deed!”

After pondering on the matter, Lee reminded the middle-aged man carefully.

“Don’t worry, Master. We’ll first capture three guys from the Green Sky hall and take away their tokens.

It's much more easier this way. The moment our men die, the men from the Green Sky Hall will die too!"

The middle-aged man revealed a sinister grin.

"All right. Go ahead!"

Lee gestured a wave of dismissal toward the man.

...

"Dear, there are only ten days away from your birthday! Let's go out and have a stroll on the street!"

Jack held Selena's hand in his as he laughed.

"Honey, we haven't made any reservation with the hotel, right? Why don't we do that now? And I think there aren't many halls to choose from right now. Damn! Why did this freaking Cecelia have to do her wedding on the same day as our party! Not many people will come to our party then!"

Selena flashed a bitter smile and continued, "But...hmmm...this isn't bad too. The billion would be enough to cover everything, but then now, perhaps, you are only left with a few hundred million. We should spend wisely, just a few tables here and there and some basics will do. Let me calculate... I think 10 million should be enough to pay for everything!"

"My dear wife, please don't worry about it. I've booked the hotel!"

Jack smiled lightly and continued, "Just relax and wait for your birthday!"

Chapter 784

“No way? You’ve booked it? Which bodyguard have you sent to make this reservation for you?”

Selena was at a loss for words. A few obvious lines formed between her brows as she spoke, “How many pax have you booked for? And how much have you paid for it? I’m afraid that our current savings are not enough to cover everything, then it’ll become a problem! We don’t have much money left, you better don’t spend it all!”

“Honey, don’t worry. Relax, sit back, and wait for the day to come. I promise you the surprise will be amazing!”

Jack giggled as he pulled Selena outside. “Let’s go, my dear! Let’s go out for a walk, we can go shopping and then pay a visit to Ben’s cybercafe to see how it’s going now!”

“How is it going? His cybercafe’s first-day opening was yesterday!”

Selena replied with a bitter smile.

“Huh? Yesterday was the first day? Why didn’t he say anything about it? I can’t even send him a bouquet of flowers to congratulate him!”

Jack’s feature morphed into one of the true surprises when he heard the news.

“It’s okay, I’ve sent a bouquet over. He kept reminding me to keep it a low profile, so we didn’t really celebrate the opening. Only in the evening, we all went out together for a simple meal as a celebration!”

When the last syllabus dropped, Selena could barely conceal the sudden flare of joy within her that her face lit up. “It looks like Ben has really grown up. He’s much more mature than before!”

However, not long after the two strolled around the area, a scene of three men following a bunch of young girls appeared before them. One of the men was actually pretending to be blind, putting on sunglasses and using a pathfinder cane, and the young girls before them were wearing miniskirts.

“What the heck!”

Jack’s face sank deeply at the scene before him. Then he said to Selena, “Selena, look over there! Those people who’re pretending blind, they must be from the Green Sky Hall. It looks like they’re taking photos of the girls’ undergarment again! Bunches of b*astard! They just couldn’t stop doing dirty deeds, could they?”

“What the...”

Selena looked toward the direction that Jack had pointed, and she could feel anger rushing through her blood vessels. However, she quickly thought of something and turned to Jack, “Wait, Jack, you’re not going to intervene again, are you?”

“Honey, you know me, there’s no way I’m going to turn a blind eye to such a thing!”

Jack ended his last word and strode hastily toward the group of men.

He had already warned the Green Sky Hall not to continue such dirty deeds and the other party made the promise as well.

He thought that the people of Green Sky Hall would naturally keep to their words, so he did not think much about it and send someone to monitor them. Never did he expect that they were still doing this dirty business under his nose.

It looked like the other party pretended to say one thing in front of him but remained as a fox behind them—sly and sneaky. They did not take Jack’s words seriously.

“Hmph! In that case, if I don’t send some of you to hell, you guys would think that I’m a paper tiger!”

Jack walked up to the three of them and snarled, “How dare you still do such dirty deeds!”

“Ah!”

Those three young girls wheeled back and saw a man following behind them, wearing sunglasses and pretending to be blind with the guiding cane in his hand, pointing gently at his feet.

The three girls yells their lungs out and stumbled back a few steps in fear.

“Motherf*cker! Who the heck are you? Do you have a death wish?”

The guy who was pretending to be blind removed his sunglasses without hesitation. In the next second, the three of them surrounded Jack.

“No, I think you’re the ones who have death wishes!”

Jack could not bother with all the nonsense anymore. He leaped two steps forwards, swung his arms, and threw out three blasting punches onto each of them.

“Ah!”

Chapter 785

The three girls were so frightened that they ran off at a lighting speed.

Jack, on the other hand, squatted down and pulled off the tokens from the men's waist. There were three words carved on the tokens—Green Sky Hall.

“Hmmm. It looked like these three are some honourable underlings in the Green Sky Hall, otherwise they wouldn't have these tokens.

Jack let out a frosty-cold chuckle. His fists clenched tightly.

“Jack, you could just teach them a lesson! Why did you kill them!”

Selena quickly ran towards Jack and questioned in a worry tone. “You'll have offended the Green Sky Hall now that you've killed their men. This is the Green Sky Hall! I heard that behind them, there's a stronger and more powerful figure! I remember the name is called something like what, Kingston Hall? That Kingston Hall is nothing but the greatest of all Halls.”

“My dear wife, don't you worry about it. I have a good relationship with the Goddess of War, Lana. We're basically best buddies!”

Jack laughed wholeheartedly at his wife's concerns and threw the token aside before taking Selena's hand and whispered, “Hmmm. We've no plans today, why don't we pay a visit to Lana's God of War Manor?”

“Are we really going? Will she agree to meet us? After all, she is the strong and mighty Goddess of War!”

Selena's plump and rosy lower lip was in between her teeth. She felt that Jack was overconfident. It was true that Jack had saved Lana's life on the battlefield, but Lana had returned the favor!

Jack's plan to play Lana a sudden visit, was it really a good idea?

“C’mon! It’ll be okay, don’t worry!”

...

“Everything went so freaking well!”

While inside a car in the distance not too far from Jack and Selena, a man was incomparably excited. “That’s too great! It’s too f*cking great! I thought that Jack would’ve questioned them which hall they belonged to and make them kill themselves or something along that line. I didn’t expect that Jack was so hot headed and actually killed them without hesitation!”

“Boss, what should we do next?”

The two other men inside the car asked.

“What should we do next? Are you dumb or retard? Get out and dispose of the corpses! It’s better to burn them and get rid of any evidence. Then we’ll go back and kill the three real Green Sky Hall men that we captured the other day!”

An evil grin appeared on the middle-aged man’s feature. “I’m pretty confident that Jack will definitely go to the Green Sky Hall and make a huge fuss of the matter!”

The middle-aged man and the other two, went off to kill the three men from Green Sky Hall after handling the three breathless bodies, and then they returned to Eagle clan and reported to the Head happily.

...

While currently, Jack and Selena were chatting and strolling nonchalantly in a mall. They went to pick a

pair of jade bracelets for Lana, the Goddess of War, then not long after they arrived at Lana's manor.

In front of the manor, there were several bodyguards hired by Lana. It seemed like they were recent hires because apparently Lana did not want others to simply pay a visit to her and disturb her life. That was why these bodyguards were hired.

"Gentlemen, we're from the Taylor family, this is Miss Selena, and I'm her husband. I've come to pay a special visit to the Goddess of War!"

Jack smiled and spoke to the bodyguards.

"The Taylor family?"

One of the bodyguards was dumbstruck for a moment, then he waved his hand. "I'm sorry but both of you better leave the manor. Even if a first-class family like the Georges, the Monts and so on, came to visit, our Goddess of War wouldn't see them. Not to mention that you're merely some Taylors!"

"He's right. There was once James from the Drake family came to pay a visit, he was shoed away!"

Another bodyguard guffawed mockingly.

"Oh, then I shall trouble you to inform the Goddess of War about our arrival. I believe if you've informed her, she'll definitely see us!"

Jack chortled in a disdain manner. If he were not afraid of his identity being exposed, he would really give these guys a good scold. He came here to visit his own disciple, yet these shrimps dared to stop him. If Joseph Smith, Fernando Campbell and Ethan Hays witnessed this scene, they would have laughed their head off.No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 786-790

Chapter 786

“Sigh! Bro, it’s not that I don’t want to help you. Even if I inform the Goddess of War, it’ll be in vain!”

A bodyguard let out a defeated sigh. “The outcome will be the same—she won’t see you!”

However, he went inside as Jack told even though he had shown impatience in his tone.

“Sir, Ma’am, the Goddess of War has a visitor today—the Queen of War—from another city. She deliberately flew a thousand miles to visit our Goddess of War. I heard that they have a close relationship. And this Queen of War is one of Goddess of War’s subordinates too. So I guess the possibility of Goddess of War willing to see you today, is non-existent!”

Another bodyguard sneered coldly at Jack and Selena and cast them a disrespectful stare.

These people were from the Taylor family, a family who was lucky to be upgraded to a second-class family recently, and yet desired to meet the Goddess of War. Not to mention that Jack was merely an adopted son-in-law of the Taylors. He was confident that the Goddess of War would definitely shut them out.

Soon after, the bodyguards who had reported the incident all ran out at the speed of light, staring at Jack and Selena in reverence. “Sir, Ma’am, the Goddess of War has agreed to see you. Please follow me!”

“No way!”

The other bodyguards involuntarily released exclamations of shock. They never thought that the Goddess of War Lana would actually agree to see Jack and Selena.

Soon enough, Jack and Selena were brought into a hall in the villa. A Queen of War in her thirties was chatting with the Goddess of War.

“I have such esteemed guests. I never thought that the two of you would come to see me today!”

Selena seemed a little nervous. There was a Queen of War and a Goddess of War right before her, and both of them were from the very top of society. Even though she had met bigshots before, there was no way she could remain calm before such eminent figures.

“Hmmm. Not bad at all! Your house is well furnished! How opulent!”

Selena did not at all expect Jack to be so comfortable at Lana’s manor; he did not greet nor salute politely to Lana and the Queen of War, instead he started roaming around and admiring the decoration.

Selena quickly pulled the corner of Jack’s sleeve to remind him of the courtesy.

Only then did Jack arch his hands before the two ladies and greeted politely. “It’s my pleasure to meet you, the Goddess of War, Lana Zechs and the Queen of War, Queenie Lynch!”

“You know me?”

There were signs of shock and surprise in Queenie’s eyes. A moment ago when Lana heard that Jack was here, she was flabbergasted with joy and could barely conceal her delight. She did not even think twice before ordering her bodyguards to let Jack and Selena in.

Therefore, she was a little bit curious about this man—Jack White, wondering who this man really was, to actually be able to get such high regard and respect from Lana.

“I often heard of the Goddess of War mentioning your name. Hence, I naturally know who you are!”

Queenie Lynch, the Queen of War, who is not only good-looking but also her Flying-Dagger technique is impeccable. Especially the battle at the mouth of the River Hartmonth, it was marvelous and made you famous since then!”

Jack chuckled and spewed those words out slowly.

“You...this...I...”

Queenie’s cheeks were immediately kissed pink at Jack’s words. How could this stranger before him know her so well?

The most shocking news was that he said that Lana often mentioned her to him. Did this mean that he always mingled with Lana? In that case, the identity of this adopted son-in-law of the Taylor family was clearly not simple.

“Jack and Sister-in-law, welcome to my humble abode. Just make yourself comfortable. Jack is like my brother, always taking care of me, so don’t feel shy or anything, okay?”

Chapter 787

What shocked Selena further was that Lana took the initiative to lean forward and shake her hand. Lana smiled at Selena warmly as she welcomed them with open arms.

“This...How can this be okay?”

Selena was flattered and astonished, at the same time, she did not know how to respond.

“What’s not okay with that? As I said, Jack and I are really close, best buddies that kind of close. So it’s natural for me to call you sister-in-law.

As Lana spoke, her expressive eyes looked towards Jack and then only wheeled back to facing Selena.

Seeing such intimate behaviors between both of them, reminded Selena of the episode that happened last time. Although the rumor of Jack being the sugar baby of Lana was purely a misunderstanding and Jack did not meet with Lana at all afterward, Selena could help but feel doubtful of their relationship.

The relationship between Jack and Lana seemed beyond the ordinary 'good'. Moreover, Lana called her 'sister-in-law', could it be that the two of them truly had an ambiguous yet romantic relationship?

Even if Jack was not Lana's sugar baby, such a relationship only happened when the two had reached somewhat an ambiguous romantic level, otherwise, why would Lana allow them in so easily, and she was being way too enthusiastic about their visit.

"Oh right! By the way, this pair of bracelets is from Jack and me. We pick it for you, hope you'll like it, the Goddess of War!"

Selena flashed an awkward smile. She quickly thought of something and handed over the gift box to Lana.

"Really? Wow! You shouldn't have! Mi casa es su casa. Just treat my house as your own, you don't have to buy me anything!"

Lana laughed joyously, and then continued, "Feel free to walk around! I'll ask the kitchen to prepare a few more dishes and we'll have a few drinks at noon later! I'm so, so, so happy that you guys can come today!"

Lana disappeared from the living room to find the chefs right after she finished her sentence.

More questions and doubts were mushrooming inside Selena's heart. She felt that the relationship between Jack and Lana was not simple. Besides, Lana had mentioned several times that just treated her

house as their own, could this be a hint of something?

“Could it be that they have a relationship beyond friendship, and they want me to have mental preparation first?”

Selena bit her rosy lips as she murmured to herself. It would not be a bad idea if Jack were to have Lana as his second wife and everyone lived together.

After all, Jack was a man who liked to stir up troubles. He had just offended the Drake family a few days ago. This behavior of his was too worrying and made the people around him unable to sleep well at night as they were afraid of revenge from the Drake family.

Hence, if Jack was together with Lana, then even the Drake family would not dare to offend any of them. Besides, Lana was an attractive woman with such an alluring good figure, and she had high status as well. It was a blessing for Jack to be with her.

“Dear, what’re you thinking about?”

Jack noticed that Selena was pondering deeply about something, he could not help but let out a small smile. “C’mon, let’s go outside for a casual walk. It’s really nice and wide here.” He took her hand as he spoke.

After saying that, Jack turned his head, faced Queenie, and said, “Dear Queen of War, would you like to join us for a stroll outside?”

“I’d rather not. I’ve already walked around with Goddess of War a moment ago. Please go ahead without me!”

Queenie laughed warmly. If she agreed to walk with them, she would be the third wheel. How could she be the third wheel when she saw the couple was all lovey-dovey?

“Dear, Lana was not bad at all. As a Goddess of War, she’s not arrogant nor brazen!”

When they were outside, Selena asked Jack and looked at him like a sneaky thief. She wanted to study his reaction.

“Well, she’s indeed a good woman!”

Jack bobbed in agreement. Lana was his disciple, of course, he knew that she was good.

Chapter 788

Hope bloomed inside Selena when she heard Jack’s opinion on Lana. It looked like Jack had a good impression of Lana. In that case, was it possible for them to be together? Or perhaps they had been in an ambiguous relationship that was beyond friendship for a long time?

At least, Jack did not reject Lana like how he did to Sharon George.

“You really think that she’s a good woman? I think the same too!”

Selena lowered her head as she verified. Then she continued in a lower voice, “If...If both of you think highly of each other, then...then... I think, dear, you can have her as the second wife. I totally accept it!”

Jack’s eyes were as wide as saucers and his jaw dropped to the ground upon hearing what Selena had spewed. “Huh? What’s wrong, honey? What nonsense are you talking about? I do think that she’s a good woman but I don’t think of her in that way!”

“But, what’s wrong with that? Since both of you feel good about each other, we might as well think in that direction. And perhaps you will slowly develop feelings for her!”

Selena burst out. "Besides, if you are together, I don't have to be afraid that you'll get into trouble and die one day! Because Lana can protect you!"

"She protects me?"

A speechless look covered Jack. "It's more like I protect her!"

"Stop spilling nonsense again. She is the Goddess of War, how could you protect her? Do you even have that ability to protect her?"

Selena did not know to laugh or to cry at Jack's account. She held his hand and continued, "Anyway, don't you think it's really strange? I'm referring to the Supreme Warrior. Who this Supreme Warrior really is? I heard that he is incredibly powerful, beyond all Gods of War. But unfortunately, no one has ever seen his face, so I'm curious!"

Jack tried his best to hold back his laughs, at the same time, his cries when he heard it. Inside his mind, he was murmuring to himself 'not only you have seen the Supreme Warrior, but also you've built a family with him!'.

A smile escaped from his mouth. He wrapped his strong arm around Selena's waist and said, "Honey, why are you so excited whenever you talk about the Supreme Warrior? Don't tell me you've fallen in love with him, who's the strongest and most powerful man in Daxia? Okay. If this man who happened to like you and asked you to marry him, would you say yes?"

In the next second, Selena shot Jack a deadly stare and rolled her eyes. "What nonsense again, why would I say yes to him? My husband treats me so well, you're enough for me. Besides, the Supreme Warrior is so good-looking and powerful, and holds a high position in this country, even if he's able to notice my existence, I'm not worthy of a powerful figure like him!"

"Okay, what if, what if you're worthy?"

Jack smiled bitterly and pried further.

“Well. That won’t work either. You’re more than enough. “

Selena wrapped her arms around fane in return and pressed her face into Jack’s chest. Her face was red and adorable.

“Silly, you’re more than enough too!”

In the distance, Lana, who was standing near the door, sneakily took a picture of the lovey-dovey couple in the garden and sent it to the message group.

In this group, there were Nine Great Gods of War, except Jack.

Usually, the chatting group was as quiet as a mouse, only a few messages popped out from time to time.

“Wow, Lana, did I see it wrong or what? It’s our Master!” Abner Young—one of the Nice Great Gods of War—exclaimed excitedly in a text he sent.

“Oh My God! I haven’t seen Master for a long time, is that woman the Mistress? The photo is only showing her back, I’m sad that I can’t know what the Mistress really looks like!”

Ethan Hays, who was in the midst of treating someone, was equally excited after seeing the message in the group.

“Unfortunately, our Master does not want us to disturb his tranquil life. Otherwise, I really hope to pay a visit to Eastfield and see how our Mistress looks like. From this photo, even it’s only her back, I can

already deduce that she's a beauty!"

Fernando Campbell, another God of War, could hardly contain his happiness as well.

Chapter 789

Soon, Sam Johnson and the other Gods of War started to have a heated discussion inside.

"Lana, I'm really envious that you get to be with our master. Oh my, such luck!" God of War Ethan Hays said in excitement.

"you guys don't know this yet but our master is trying to do a wedding ceremony for his wife on her birthday. Master's wife doesn't know about this yet and only thinks that our master is planning a birthday party for her. However, I've already booked a hotel as per the master's instructions and he's already given permission that all of you can come if you want to. Firstly, you cannot expose his identity as the Supreme Warrior; secondly, nobody can expose the fact that he's your master. Decide what you want to do yourself!" Lana had a smile at the corner of her lips and sent another message to the group.

"What?!" Ethan grew increasingly excited. "That's great. We finally get to meet our master after a long time and enjoy ourselves in Eastfield. I heard that there are many pretty women here. Let's see if I can get a wife here!"

"How's that possible? Ethan, you're a God of War. Aren't there loads of pretty ladies waiting in lines to have blind dates with you after you went home? You are still single? You have really high requirements!" God of War Abner Young replied in surprise.

"By the way, can I bring my family members? Lana, I would like to bring my wives. I have two wives now!" Fernando Campbell asked in the group.

"Fernando, you're doing really good! You actually married another wife?" Lana said in surprise. "How can you be seduced so easily?!"

Fernando continued to say. "Well, what should I say? There are so many pretty ladies that I had to give in to their seduction. I grew fond of a girl I knew from my younger days! How about you, Lana? You should get someone! However, you do need to be careful as you're considered rich and have a high status nowadays. Observe those men carefully as some of them might be pleasing you in order to use your power!"

Lana smiled and replied. "Don't worry, Fernando. I understand this very clearly in my heart. Master has already informed me that everybody who wants to bring their family members can do as they please and treat this as a trip. However, the hotel I booked doesn't have a helipad. If any of you plan to come over in your private helicopters, you would need to park it on the empty space outside of the city and come in via car!"

"Alright, we got it. Thank you, Lana! There are still ten days and I really look forward to it!" Fernando replied.

"Okay, I shall stop here as master and his wife are walking over. I'm going to keep them company as I want to have some drinks with our master's wife later!" Lana once again sent a message that caused all Gods of War to be envious before placing the phone in her pocket.

"How's it? Do you like it? James Drake really has a good taste and this place has got a really nice design!" Lana smiled and asked when she saw the duo walking over.

"It's quite nice. I wonder how's the Supreme Warrior Manor? We should go take a look in the future!" Jack smiled and said.

"I don't think you can go in and the most you can do is peek from the entrance!" Selena smiled bitterly. When James knew that the Supreme Warrior and Goddess of War were coming, he purposely ordered people to build a Supreme Warrior Manor and God of War Villa as gifts for both of them.

Pitifully, the Supreme Warrior had never appeared until this day. Looking forward to his appearance in Eastfield was like a dream.

However, the Supreme Warrior Manor was still useful as the Supreme Warrior could use it for his vacation anytime he traveled to Eastfield.

Chapter 790

Queenie Lynch was surprised as she could clearly feel how close Jack was to Lana.

After they had lunch, they went outside for a stroll.

Jack looked at Lana and asked when Selena went to the toilet. "Have you done what I asked you to help me with? Is the hotel booked?"

"Don't you worry, I've already booked the hotel, wedding dress and everything else! The wedding dress is a gift from the shop. What should I say? They forcefully gifted the best dress of their shop to me when they knew that I'm the Goddess of War. I think that Selena will definitely look pretty in it!" Lana smiled and continued saying. "As for the hotel, they decided to give us a 50% discount on everything after they knew that I'm there to book the entire place!"

"A 50% discount?!" Jack was embarrassed when he heard. "Aren't they afraid of losing money?"

"Hey, you need to understand that I'm the Goddess of War. My appearance at their hotel is automatically an advertisement. The owner won't be losing any money with a 50% discount. Their future business will surely improve when they use me as their subject of the advertisement. These businessmen are very smart!" Lana rolled her eyes at Jack before saying happily.

Beside them, Queenie was dumbfounded by what she heard. Were they joking? Jack actually asked Lana to secretly run errands for him? Apart from that, it seemed that Lana really enjoyed helping him. What was going on between them? She started wondering if both of them had some ambiguous relationship between them when she saw how close they were.

“Alright, keep this a secret!” Jack nodded and looked at Queen of War Queenie. “Queen of War Lynch, kindly keep this a secret too!”

“Don’t you worry as this has nothing to do with me. I think I will be going back tomorrow!” Queenie smiled. She did not live there and was only here to pay her superior a visit.

“Queenie, you cannot leave because you will definitely regret it if you leave today!” Lana smiled, glanced in the direction of where the toilet was before continuing speaking to Queenie. “Let me tell you about it. Jack prepared a wedding ceremony for Selena and it is disguised as her birthday dinner. He’s prepared to surprise Selena and all the other Gods of War are rushing over to attend it. Don’t you want to meet Fernando Campbell, Ethan Hays, and the others?”

“What?!” Queenie was startled when she heard this. “Lana, did I hear correctly? You’re saying that they are all coming here? All 8 Gods of War are coming over to attend the ceremony?”

“Definitely! Do you think I will lie to you?” Lana smiled and said.

“Oh my god, that’s awesome! All the Gods of War are coming over? Oh my god, I...I can’t even dream about something like this. They are actually...” Queenie was so excited that she did not know what to say and her voice was trembling.

The Nine Great Gods of War seldom had the chance to gather when they were on the battlefield as they were always leading their team and fighting the enemies. It was considered as a big occasion when two Gods of War gathered at the same place. It would be such a sensation if all nine Great Gods of War gathered at the same place!

It seemed that she had made the right choice by coming over here.

However, she soon realized a problem. Who was Jack? Why was he so capable and was able to get all Nine Great Gods of War to join his wedding ceremony?

A person suddenly flashed through her head. This person had on a dragon-shaped mask and was a stronger master than the Nine Great Gods of War. This person was the strongest master amongst the entire Daxia army.

This person was the Supreme Warrior. All this while, nobody had ever seen the Supreme Warrior's true appearance. Was it possible that Jack in front of her was the Supreme Warrior?

"Is...is it possible that you're my idol, Master Su...Supreme Warrior?!" No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 791-795

Chapter 791

Queenie's chest heaved in excitement as she looked at Jack, starry-eyed.

Queenie's spot-on guess made Jack flustered. It seemed that he made the right move when he asked the other Gods of War to find an excuse when they came over.

"You must be! I've seen you on the battlefield once. Your height and figure definitely matched the Supreme Warrior!" gushed Queenie once she picked up on Jack's silence.

Jack nodded. "Keep it a secret for me, alright? I don't want others to know that I'm the Supreme Warrior."

"But of course, I'll keep it a secret!" Queenie was so excited that she almost cried.

"Ahh!" Queenie shrieked animatedly and rushed forward to hug Jack, unable to control her impulses. "I'm so excited! I'm so, so excited! I can't stop myself! I need to hug my idol!"

"Queenie, Selena's coming back!" Queenie's actions stunned Lana speechless. Lana then turned to look and spotted—not too far away—Selena coming out of the toilet.

Selena's jaws seemed as though it was unhinged when she noticed what transpired in her absence; she wondered if she was hallucinating. What was going on? Did they not say that it was Lana and Jack that had an ambiguous relationship? Why...why is Queenie hugging Jack?

She could not put two and two together, even when she thought about it deeply.

Although Queenie was not as beguiling or voluptuous as Lana, she was a beautiful woman in her own rights. Was it possible that these two women were in a relationship with Jack?

Selena smiled feebly before she made her way toward Jack.

Queenie was surprised when she heard Lana's warning and quickly let go of Jack, though her nerves were still frazzled with excitement. This Queen of War—who was highly regarded by others—became Jack's fangirl at that instant.

Queenie tried her best to maintain calm. She smiled and explained embarrassingly, "My apologies, Selena, I was too excited. I just... I just happened to realize that Jack looked very much like an idol I know, so I couldn't help myself!"

"Idol?" Selena wondered what was going on. She looked at Jack cautiously but was unable to make out who Jack looked like. She admitted Jack was rather handsome, but he did not share a semblance with any famous idol. Was it a lesser-known idol?

"Yes, it's... It's someone very strong in our division. He's my idol!" Queenie quickly thought about it and explained herself.

Selena finally realized what Queenie was talking about. "Oh, I see. You're talking about someone in the armies. I racked my head for anyone in particular, but I just couldn't find the idol match!"

They rested there for some time before Jack left with Selena.

The moment the two left, Lana turned to look at Queenie. With a bitter, disbelief smile, she said, "You almost exposed the Supreme Warrior!"

"I... I couldn't help myself. This is the first time I faced the Supreme Warrior! Oh my god, I actually managed to hug him just now! I'm going to talk about this until the day I die!" Queenie grew excited once again, and her dignity as the Queen of War was nowhere to be found.

Chapter 792

Queenie's antics stunned Lana, and the latter said, "You should wait for another ten days! By then, the other Gods of War will be here and you'll be able to take a photo with them. You'll get the chance to talk all about it all you want by then, don't you think?"

"Yes, you're definitely right!" Queenie grew restless when she thought about it, and with a smile on her face, she added, "I never thought I could attend the Supreme Warrior and his wife's wedding ceremony. This means that I'm able to witness a historic moment!"

"Look how excited you are!" Lana laughed. "Are you still in a rush to go back now?"

"No! Definitely not! Why should I go back? I have to stay here and attend the wedding!" Queenie thought about it and continued saying, "By the way, since this is the Supreme Warrior's wedding, how much should I give as their present? How about one billion? Would that be too little? No, no, I need to give him two billion. After all, this is the Supreme Warrior's wedding, and one billion is too little to represent my sincerity!"

Lana was speechless. "Queen of War Lynch, it's best if you stay calm, alright? It's too much if you give him one or two billion. Wouldn't you expose his identity to others if you did that? Wouldn't others start questioning it? Apart from that, I don't think the other Gods of War would give that much of an amount!"

“If that’s the case, how much should I give? I’m going crazy, I can’t think straight!” Queenie was still very excited.

...

Once they got out of the God of War Mansion, Jack and Selena got on a taxi and headed straight to Ben’s new internet cafe.

“It seems the internet cafe is doing great! Business seems to be good!” beamed Selena, followed with a short chuckle as they looked around the second floor of the internet cafe.

Meanwhile, Ben was talking with the cashier. Surely, the people who came with him—such as Elaine, who was there to protect him—were also enjoying themselves.

Out of the blue... “Excuse us! Excuse us!” Several gangsters rushed in with baseball bats at hand. They pushed Jack and Selena away with arrogant expressions on their faces as they strode.

“Is Ben in trouble?” Selena was slightly worried when she assessed the situation.

“I don’t think so.” Jack frowned. “How’s it possible that he offended someone when he just started his business? I think these people are here to cause trouble.”

The gangsters walked behind the counter before one of them said aggressively, “Our boss said that your internet cafe is interrupting ours. It’s best if you close up tomorrow, get it? If not, we’ll break every piece of equipment in here!”

“We’re in your way?” Ben scoffed after he heard this and said, “You guys are going overboard. The business of your internet cafe is bad because your service is bad. Apart from that, your equipment is bad and old, and you’re here to wreck the place because business is bad?”

One of the men—with yellow-colored hair—raised his chin as he knocked on the counter lightly with his baseball bat. “Young man, we don’t care about those things. Just close up tomorrow or we won’t be holding back!”

“Does your boss have a death wish?” Elaine and two other pretty bodyguards walked over, expressions darkened with anger.

“Oh, and we have three beautiful ladies here. Tsk, tsk! I never expected this. No wonder business is good here... They have pretty waitresses!” One of the men swallowed his saliva when he saw those three pairs of legs that could go on for days.

“Big Brother, look at the words on their clothes. Taylor family’s bodyguard? What’s going on?” Another man was slightly afraid.

The yellow-haired man merely scoffed, “Don’t be afraid, they’re just some women. We have so many people with us! Do you think that we can’t settle it? What bodyguards would blatantly state that they’re bodyguards on their clothes? They’re just lying to us, in an attempt of an intimidation tactic!”

Chapter 793

“You’re right. This is the first time I’ve seen bodyguards with their positions blatantly written on their clothes!” The man who was initially afraid relaxed at the thought. “These ladies look really stunning. Is it possible that this internet cafe provides some other special services? Why else would their business do so well if it isn’t true?”

“Oh yeah. Why didn’t I think of that?” The yellow-haired guy’s eyes twinkled as he gulped his saliva.

“Bastards!” Elaine and the two other bodyguards looked at each other before charging forward at the same time. In a blink of an eye, the entire group of gangsters fell to the ground as they groaned in pain.

Jack smiled. "It seems like I don't have to intervene, someone else will settle this for me." It seemed that his choice of employing more bodyguards was a wise one.

At the very least, they could protect his family under most circumstances.

"Let's go!" The gangsters struggled for some time before they could get back up on their feet. Horrified, the gangsters ran away like drowned mice while their eyes were filled with dread.

"Sister, Brother-in-law, why are you guys here?" Ben, upon noticing Jack and Selena, welcomed them with a smile.

"We're free and have no work to be completed, so we came over to see how you're doing!" Selena looked at Ben with a pleased smile on her face. Ben had finally grown up.

"Thank you for thinking of me fondly, Sister. Have you guys had lunch? Do you want to have something? My treat!" Ben chuckled.

"Oh, we've eaten already. We're just here to take a look, nothing more!" assured Jack with a smile. "It seems like your business is doing good. We're happy for you."

It was then when Ben lowered his head. Shyly, he blurted, "Sister, Brother-in-law, there's something I'd like to tell you guys. I... I'm in love!"

"When did it happen? Who is it? It happened so quickly!" Jack and Selena were surprised when they heard Ben's announcement. After all, Ben had not been in contact with other girls and was busy with the internet cafe all the while.

"It's... It's Elaine." Ben pulled Elaine's hand shyly and introduced her to them.

Elaine's blush seared across her cheeks as she meekly said, "Master, do...do you guys approve of us?"

Jack was over the moon. "Nonsense, of course we do! How can we not approve this?" Elaine was no doubt a nice girl, yet nobody knew she would date Ben after they spent these few days together.

"I'm absolutely thrilled with this!" Selena was just as excited. She said to Ben, "Ben, I can see that Elaine is a good girl, and she's a thousand times better than Xena. Don't let her down, alright? You have to cherish her well!"

"Don't worry, Selena. He's a weakling, so he won't even dare hurt my feelings. We'll be fine as long as I don't hurt him!" said Elaine jokingly, a sweet smile adorning her face as she did. "Moreover, he'd never win if we ever fight."

Chapter 794

Only then did Selena recall that although Elaine seemed obedient and cute, she was no regular girl. Her martial arts was better than Ben by a hundred times.

Still, she knew Ben was someone who cherished his girlfriend with all his heart, so she was sure he would not bully Elaine. They were indeed a match made in heaven.

"Alright, I'm really happy that the two of you are together. We'll be taking our leave now." Selena smiled and was about to leave with Jack.

"Selena, since you're already here with Jack and this is an internet cafe, why don't you guys spend one to two hours here? Come support my business!" came Ben's cheeky reply.

"Are you kidding? Do you think we're people who like to surf the internet like that? Alright, that's it. Bye!" Selena turned around while waving at Ben.

Meanwhile... “Ahem, ahem! Elaine, I hand Ben to you. He’s a shy person and doesn’t take the initiative to make moves most of the time. We know this because he had been with Xena for a long period of time, yet he didn’t touch her. Be more proactive, okay?” teased Jack.

“Master, what are you talking about? I’m a girl! How can I take the initiative if the guy isn’t actively doing anything? I’m no loose woman!” Elaine’s face blushed a crimson color. She never thought that there would be times when the highly respected Supreme Warrior would make such jokes.

“Oh, Elaine, you’re just asking for it!” Ben glanced at Elaine before quickly kissing her on her cheek.

“Ah!” Elaine never thought Ben would act so boldly and kiss her in front of so many people in the internet cafe. This caused her to instantly turn very shy.

This was also the first time Ben did something so boldly, and he ran far away after he kissed Elaine as if he was afraid she would hit him.

Chuckles escaped Elaine’s lips as she saw Ben scurrying away. “Come over here, I won’t hit you! Don’t make me look like a shrew!”

“You... You won’t hit me? You’re not angry?” Ben was in disbelief as he carefully walked toward Elaine.

Suddenly, Elaine grabbed onto him tightly and pulled him closer so she could kiss his cheek. “Hmph. I want to kiss you too! You can’t be the only one who gets something out of this!”

“Oh my!” Ben jumped in excitement, and many people in the internet cafe started clapping and cheering after they saw this.

Ben chuckled with glee as he gushed to the crowd, “That made me so happy! I’ll treat every customer here to two hours of free time!”

“Thank you, Boss!”

“The boss is the best!” Every customer in the cafe cheered at Ben’s announcement.

Pleased with the turn of events, Jack and Selena happily left.

Chapter 795

Selena felt at ease. She used to worry how Ben led his life in a muddle, and she was also worried about him marrying Xena. She knew it in her guts that Xena was no good for Ben; the girl was terribly calculative and liked to fake things.

Elaine was much purer when compared to Xena, and it helped that Elaine was much prettier as well.

As they both had clear schedules for the day, they both went to pick up Kylie from school.

Needless to say, Kylie was over the moon when both her mother and father came to pick her up from school. Her excitement was written all over her face.

Everybody rested well that night.

...

Fiona woke Selena and Jack very early in the morning.

“What is it, Mother? I still want to continue my beauty sleep. Why did you wake me up so early in the morning? I don’t need to work nowadays,” muttered a disgruntled Selena. She slept rather last night,

and it transpired after Jack's suggestive comment about having a second child. Of course, they both slept late.

Selena wanted to wake up much later as she was still very tired. She never thought that her mother would wake her at eight in the morning.

"Listen to me: One of my best friends who married a person overseas has returned after ten years since her last trip back. She's called me and wants to treat us to a meal!" chirped an obviously excited Fiona.

"She's treating you to a meal, Mother, and you can go alone in that case. Why do you need to wake us up? We're not interested to eat with your best friend. We don't even know her!" Selena was dumbfounded at her mother's reasoning. She rolled her eyes at her mother and was prepared to go back to bed.

"Get up! Don't go back to sleep! There's a reason why I'm waking you guys up. This is not just a normal meal. My best friend's father has caught a very weird disease, and since Jack knows how to cure people, I think he can go and help take a look." Fiona pulled Selena back to sit up. "Since your husband is going, you need to accompany him and go too. Apart from that, this best friend of mine is rather wealthy overseas! I heard that they operate a really big company there!"

"Are you being serious? Sure, Jack knows how to cure people, but he can't cure every illness, right?" Selena looked at Jack as she pouted.

Jack smiled. "Well, I can cure almost all illnesses. Even Ethan Hays's medical skills aren't as good as mine."

"Fine. And you're starting to boast again," Selena conceded, though a small smile appeared on her face. "Alright, let's go. Let me tidy myself up and I'll tag along for food."

"That's right. Isn't it nice as we're able to enjoy a big meal without paying anything?" With a pleased grin on her face, Fiona then told Selena, "By the way, bring your most expensive bag and put on your

expensive jewelry, Selena. I remember how we were once poor, and I can see that even my best friend looked down on me. Hmph! Now that I'm rich, I'm never going to let a repeat of that happen."

"Mother, you don't seem like you're going to a reunion with your best friend. It seems like you're only going to show off." Selena grew frustrated. Was it necessary to parade herself before others?

"Nonsense! I'm rich now, and it's only right that I get to flaunt however I want to. Years ago, she snatched a man that I really liked and that man fell for her money," Fiona said angrily. "Eventually, she found out that this guy had relationships with several other women at the same time, and she went overseas after they broke up. Who would've thought that she'd marry a man while she's out there, and that man is also from Daxia!"

"Wow, Mother, I didn't know you had quite the story from way back then!" said Selena with a smile after she finished washing her face. "So you married my father later on, huh? You got your hands on a young master from a third-class aristocratic family?"

"Absolutely not! The Taylor family wasn't a third-class aristocratic family at that time, though they were considered as a wealthy family who does business!" came Fiona's straight-forward reply, not beating around the bush. "It's a pity that your father is a disappointing person and doesn't have much talent in businesses. I spent my life in a wretched way even though I'm married to him." No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 796-800

Chapter 796

Fiona's comment on Selena's father—her own husband—stunned Selena to the point she had no proper words to say. She rolled her eyes at Fiona. "Mother, Father is a very nice person. He's at least a person who doesn't talk much and is quite honest. He's considered as a responsible person and isn't hard-headed, and you should be satisfied with his character. Apart from that, he's never looked at other women all this while, right?"

Fiona instantly snapped just as Selena finished speaking, "Him? I wouldn't mind if he gets another wife if she's a really capable person. On the flip side, if she's incapable and still wants another wife, I'll teach him a good lesson!" Fiona paused here before continuing, "On a second thought, if she's capable and can give me ten million monthly so that I can spend to my heart's content, I wouldn't even bat an eye if

he had two or three other wives!”

Jack and Selena were speechless when they heard what Fiona said. It seemed that Fiona was really infatuated with money.

“Let’s drive the Rolls-Royce,” said Fiona right as Jack was about to enter a different car. She chuckled before adding, “This car is much more expensive than the other cars!”

Jack and Selena were dumbfounded for the nth time due to Fiona’s choices and words. They could only agree and boarded the Rolls-Royce and left.

...

The Rolls-Royce entered the compound of a grand-looking hotel, and they parked at the underground car park before they went to the lobby via the lift.

Fiona looked around before greeting a woman in her forties standing not too far away from them. “Oh my, Irene! It’s been a long time! I barely recognize you!” She led Jack and Selena toward that woman.

“Fiona, it’s been a long time!” The woman had on extremely heavy makeup and a branded bag in her arms. As Fiona and her company came closer toward her, Irene added, “You look good, Fiona! You’ve been doing a great job maintaining yourself, and you look rather loaded too. This... This bag is from Hermes, right? Tsk, tsk! You’re a rich woman now!”

Irene then turned to look at Jack and Selena. She smiled and asked, “And these two are...?”

“This is my daughter, Selena, and my son-in-law, Jack,” Fiona replied with a smile. She was satisfied when Irene herself noted how rich she had become.

“Oh my, your daughter has grown up! She’s got such a great temperament and a real beauty to boot. The daughter of our class belle is undeniably beautiful!” Irene praised them.

Fiona’s grin never left her face. “Oh you, stop talking about it. Being the class belle was ages ago!” There was no lie; Fiona was the most beautiful girl in their class back then.

“Oh, yes! This is my husband, Lawrence Watson, and my son, Jayden Watson!” Irene introduced the men standing beside her with a smile. One of them was her son and the other was her husband.

Chapter 797

Despite his portly body size, Lawrence’s height gave him the image of a burly man. He had a cigar in his mouth which he was half-way done with.

He measured Selena and Fiona for some time before he smilingly said, “I’ve heard from Irene that her best friend here is the prettiest woman in her class, and now that we’ve met face-to-face, I see that you’re indeed stunning. Your daughter is all grown-up, yet you’re still so charming. You look like you’re in your thirties.”

“Oh my, Mr. Watson, you’re too generous! This best friend of mine was also one of the prettiest girls in our class!” Fiona could not control the smile on her face. The group of three in front of her were people from the upper class, and their twenty or-so bodyguards were men from foreign countries. The bodyguards—including two men of color—looked rather strong.

Fiona looked at the slightly chubby young man by their side. “Your son also looks handsome!”

Jack was bewildered by Fiona’s choice of words. While Jayden was no ugly man, he was not handsome either.

“They all say that. What can I do? All rich people look handsome!” Jayden wore a rather arrogant smirk as he added, “Daxia seems to be doing quite well and is developing quite quickly, but I feel that the air here isn’t as good as America. The environment there is so much sweeter and nicer compared to this

place!”

Jack was downright pissed to hear such words. Had it been any other man instead of the son of Fiona’s best friend, he would have slapped him with all his might. This guy was from Daxia. How dare he say something like this just after living several years overseas?!

“Is that true? I’m so sorry that you have to suffer here. I wonder why you still came back if the air here is so bad!” While Jack could not put him in his place right then and there, he could not help slipping a comeback at Jayden.

“If we didn’t have things to do here and didn’t need to send my grandfather back here for treatment, I wouldn’t have returned!” Jayden glanced at Jack and smiled coldly. “Your wife and mother-in-law are dressed up so well, but you’re dressed so badly. Can’t you dress up since you’ll be having a meal in such a high-class hotel?”

Jack merely chuckled. “It doesn’t seem bad at all. This clothing is worth a few thousand dollars, and I think that this is good enough!” Jack looked at the clothes on him. His clothes were quite new and clean, so he did not feel that there was anything wrong.

He would not have bought such expensive clothes if Selena and Fiona had not asked him to buy several better clothes. In his opinion, clothes were extra. He never thought such clothes would be ridiculed by others.

Still, what Jayden said made sense as Selena and Fiona wore clothes worth ten thousand a piece. Compared to them, what he was wearing seemed out of place.

Fiona’s face darkened when she heard Jack’s reply. She recalled how she only reminded Selena to dress up nicely in her haste, so much so that she forgot to remind Jack. She saw him wearing new clothes so she thought that he had worn something much more expensive. Fiona never thought what he had on was something only worth several thousand dollars.

With a sheepish smile on her face, Fiona sheepishly chuckled and said, "My son-in-law isn't a particular person. We actually have lots of clothes that are worth tens of thousands and hundreds of thousands. He's just dressed casually today!"

Fiona then hardened her gaze at Jack as she said, "Look at you. You're here to meet the honorable Mr. Watson! How can you dress so casually? Please take care of your image in the future, alright?"

Jack was rather unhappy with that. Fiona asked him to please the other party when they were such arrogant people. Was it only because they traveled to many countries and were well-off people?

"It's okay, it's okay... Let's go downstairs now! I've already booked a private room for us!" Lawrence laughed and alleviated the situation..

Chapter 798

"It baffles me how a man who's daft in picking clothes to wear for certain occasions could get such a beautiful wife! I wonder how you get so lucky." Jayden looked at Jack again before he turned to walk toward the lift, his eyes filled with contempt.

"I..." Jack balled his fists tightly and was ready to run right for him.

Jack only managed to take one step forward before Selena interjected him.

She stopped him with her eyes, and it was only after everyone else had gone before them did she say, "Why do you care about what trashy people like him say? Let's ignore him, and we'll leave after we finish our meal. People like this leave a bad taste in my mouth. I wouldn't have come had it not been Mother forcing us to come!"

"Alright." Jack quickly stamped down his anger after Selena coaxed him, and he told himself to not drop to the levels of such trashy people.

...

The group of people soon entered a well-decorated private room.

“Everybody can order what you like to your heart’s content. To be honest, I grew up overseas and I seldom eat this kind of food. I don’t really like the food here!” Young Master Watson sat down and still had an aloof attitude.

Selena and Fiona smiled embarrassingly before taking up the menu and started ordering dishes.

“Jayden, be careful when you speak. Although you grew up overseas and you seldom stayed at Daxia, your mother and I are Daxians. By default, you’re also a Daxian, with Daxian blood running in you. Do you understand?” Lawrence eyed his son sharply as he continued, “The war that happened between both countries not long ago is quite embarrassing for people with our status.”

“Embarrassing? What’s so embarrassing about that? Didn’t Uncle Watson just say that we’re all Daxians? This is nothing embarrassing, right?” Jack casually replied with a smirk.

“Sigh... Although we’re Daxians, we’re considered Americans since we’ve lived there for quite some time, and this goes especially for my son. He’s been living there from a young age, and he seldom returns to Daxia. This is his third time back here, and we were the ones who specially wished that both countries didn’t go into war because we have feelings for both countries!” Lawrence sighed and had a helpless expression on his face.

Jack started smiling coldly again once he heard this. “So that’s what you mean. After the rather detailed explanation, it seems like you two are almost becoming residents of both countries. This is really ridiculous! How can you not know where you’re from? What’s the difference between this and being in two relationships at the same time?”

Jayden instantly slammed his palm against the table as he shot up from his seat, his hardened gaze fixed onto Jack in anger. “What’s with all this talk? If it wasn’t because your mother-in-law and my mother are

best friends, you won't be walking out of this hotel in one piece!"

"Really? Just with these people?" Jack laughed and stood up after he heard what Jayden said. "I'm going to be honest with you: Your bodyguards are nothing in my opinion!"

Lawrence intended to reprimand him, wanting to show his anger, but he said nothing when he saw Jayden getting angry.

Lawrence smirked a cold smirk at Jack's boisterous reply. "You're rather arrogant for saying such things. It seems like you're good at fighting. If that's the case, do you want to test your strength with my bodyguards? You can choose who you want. How about that?"

"One? Are you really looking down on me? They can all come at me for all I care!" Jack smiled coldly and looked at their bodyguards in disdain. Most of these bodyguards were Americans, and both men of dark skin seemed rather powerful. It so happened that Jack wanted to test himself out.

Chapter 799

"Sit down, Jack! What nonsense are you talking about? We're here to eat, not to fight!" Fiona was so angry that she almost fainted. They were here to have a meal and to see if Jack can help treat Jayden's grandfather. It never occurred to her that the situation would turn sour; she forgot that Jack was a man who liked to cause trouble. It escaped her to remind him.

Fiona disliked Jayden, but she was aware he was still so young. Could Jack just not let him be?

"Mother, I'm not here to fight. I'm here to exchange experiences with them!" Jack rubbed his fists and walked to one side of the room.

"Are you sure you want to do this, young man?" sneered one of the bodyguards—an American—with a condescending smirk. "You have to know that our countries are enemies. Aren't you afraid that this fight will disrupt their peace?" The other party was obviously implying something to Jack.

"I'm really not afraid of this!" Jack thought about it and signaled them as he added, "After all, you guys won't be able to beat me."

Jayden cackled. "You're really arrogant!" He then turned to Fiona and said, "Auntie, food isn't served yet. This son-in-law of yours must be quite a show-off person. This is good, such a person needs to be punished so that his arrogant ways can be corrected."

Lawrence chimed in with a pleased grin, "What Jayden says makes sense. Let's just treat this as an entertainment program, that they're entertaining us before our meal. This is quite a good idea!"

Fiona was at a loss for words upon hearing what the father-and-son duo had to say. She could only offer a sheepish smile as she spoke, "Alright, it seems like there's no other way around it. However, everybody needs to be careful. It's just a test, so don't go overboard!"

"Madam, that'd be quite difficult. Your son-in-law asked us to attack him altogether; he's basically mocking us!" One of the dark-skinned men walked two steps forward and balled his hands into fists. "Still, I know I'll be able to settle this matter!"

The man then grinned widely, his pearly white teeth seemingly gleaming. He then rushed forward like a panther, and he seemingly blinked rather closely to Jack—fast as lightning—and aimed his punch toward Jack.

"Such speed!" Jack's expression seemingly morphed into one of surprise at the man's speed. These bodyguards were really strong, and this dark-skinned man's power was almost the same as Elaine's.

"Are you afraid now, young man?" The black man in front of him smiled when he saw Jack's surprised look. His fist was just a short distance away from Jack, and he wanted to see if this arrogant young man could meet his punch.

"Your speed really surprised me, but..." Jack curled his hands into fists and made his move speedily. His

fist met the opponent's fist in a powerful collision.

Uprooted, the man zipped through the air and landed on the floor. He felt a sweetness at his throat and vomited blood.

"You're no match for me!" Jack stood straight and waved his hands at the other bodyguards. "You guys can come at me together!"

Chapter 800

"Let's get him! I don't believe this!" The brawny bodyguards looked at each other before they rushed toward Jack.

Despite their numbers, none of them managed to even graze a strand of Jack's hair before they fell to the ground. The men were either clutching onto their stomach or chest in pain, their faces pale as well.

Several people moaned in pain as their ribs had been broken.

Lawrence and Jayden's face darkened when they saw their bodyguards lying on the floor.

"A group of useless rubbish. How dare you guys claim that you're mercenaries?" scoffed Jayden as he stood up in anger. "You can't even win over a young man! I don't understand this!"

"Young Master, we're not rubbish. This young man is genuinely too powerful and we can't beat him, honest!" One of the men had his forehead covered in sweat due to pain. "Young Master, my rib is broken! I need to go to the hospital!"

"Get out, all of you! Get out!" Jayden asked his men to go to the hospital with a cold expression on his face.

Fiona's best friend, Irene chuckled shortly before she smilingly said, "Fiona, this son-in-law of yours is rather strong. Although he doesn't have good etiquette, he's really good at fighting!"

"He's quite good! He didn't waste five years in the army, and I heard that he's a head commander!" It was plain to see that Fiona was happy when she heard how Irene praised Jack.

Jayden sat down angrily and mumbled, "So what if you know how to fight? You're just a dumb fighter! What kind of masters can't we get if we're rich? I can even get the number one assassin!"

"Young Master Watson is really good at this!" Jack laughed and sat down casually. "However, that barely intimidated me. I wouldn't be afraid even if you invite the Ten Great Assassins here! Of course, you'd have to spend a great amount of money to get them working for you!"

"Jack, stop talking nonsense! You can't make such jokes!" Fiona was startled when she heard what Jack said. Who did he think the Ten Great Assassins were? Every member was frighteningly powerful and deadly; Jack could not make such jokes even if it was for a bluff.

Jack looked at Fiona and said with a smile, "Mother, I'm telling the truth. I'm not joking!"

"Well, well! You're quite arrogant when you speak!" Jayden laughed before pretending to be a gentleman. "You don't need to worry about it. We Watson family aren't petty people, and we won't send assassins to kill you just because you hit our bodyguards just now. Apart from that, we don't need to get assassins if we really want to kill you. There are many masters in our Watson family, and those who you just fought were bodyguards of lower ranks. You've seen nothing yet!"

"The dishes and wine have been served, so let's eat," came Lawrence's announcement. "Young Jack is indeed rather skilled in fighting. After all, it's quite difficult for him to fight so many bodyguards alone. His five years spent in the army weren't wasted after all!" No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 801-805

Chapter 801

At this moment, Fiona spoke again, smiling, "Right, Mr. Watson, not only is this son-in-law of mine a good fighter but he's also specialized in certain skills. I called him over today in the hopes that he would be able to help you!"

"Really? Tell me!"

Lawrence smiled, curious.

"My son-in-law is a good medical practitioner and knows all about medicine. Let me tell you about a young mistress of a first-class aristocratic family in Eastfield—Sharon George of the George family. She had been suffering from a strange illness, one that made her obese..."

Fiona started narrating Jack's heroic deeds. After she finished her story, she said, "Tell me, isn't he amazing? He actually helped her to lose weight within three days. She went from a huge fatty to a slim and gorgeous young woman!"

"What a miracle. To be able to lose so much weight within three days, he must be fantastic at what he did!"

Irene exclaimed when she heard that. She looked at Jack. "Look at me. I've been gorging myself with plenty of good food, and now there's so much fat around my waist," she said. "Can you give me one of those miracle pills? Help me to lose weight too. Please?"

Jack only flashed a wan smile when he heard that. "I do have the medicine, ma'am, but I can't just give it to you," he replied. "It's extremely expensive. You can't just hope to buy it with a small sum of money!"

Irene suddenly felt embarrassed. "No problem. No problem at all," she quickly said, grinning. "Tell me how much it is. I'll buy it from you. Of course, something so effective would be of high value!"

Jayden listened to the exchange, and suddenly felt displeased. "You're being so calculative. We treated

you to this meal worth over a million dollars, and you're still asking for money for a single pill? Have you not seen money in your life before?"

Here, he paused for a while before continuing leisurely, "But we don't lack money either. Tell us how much it is then. We'll just treat it as charity!"

However, Jack simply smiled. "The Watson family should be able to pay for the medicine, right? Since you all have so much money," he said. "It's actually not that expensive. One only costs three hundred million!"

"Three hundred million! A single slimming pill costs three hundred million! Are you kidding me?"

Jayden immediately cried out, but quickly plastered on a smile. "Looks like you're trying to swindle us, knowing that we're rich, eh?" he said.

Jack answered, "I already told you that the medicine was expensive. It's because the base cost is really pricey, and more importantly, it's effective! Someone like your mother wouldn't have much to lose anyway. If she takes the pill now, all her fat will melt off by tonight!"

"Is it that miraculous?"

It was evident that Jayden was cynical. "All right then. Three hundred million it is," he said. "Give your account number to me and I'll make the transfer now. But if my mother hasn't lost weight by tomorrow, I'll have your head. Do you still dare to make this deal?"

"Why wouldn't I?"

Jack straightaway supplied his account number. It was difficult for Jayden to go on, but he could not back out of the situation now, so he could only clench his teeth as he transferred the three hundred million dollars to Jack.

Selena and Fiona were both well aware that Jack was indeed extorting the other man, simply because the latter acted so high and mighty.

However, they never thought that Jayden would actually buy Jack's medicine for the sake of preserving his dignity. Since they had the opportunity to earn three hundred million dollars with such little effort, they naturally did not bother to stop him.

Besides, Jack had transferred the billion dollars he had earned the last time to the Taylor family's bank account just yesterday. Now they were lacking money. Selena was also worried about what they would do in the future. Of course she was happy, being able to earn this three hundred million.

Jack quickly stuffed his hand into his pocket and wiggled around in it. When he took it out, a single pill lay on his palm. He thrust it toward Irene. "Your son is pretty good, ma'am. He's a filial one. This is the slimming pill that he bought for you!"

Irene was a little taken aback. "You simply just put such an expensive medicine in your pocket? And it doesn't even come in a box?"

Jack grinned. "It's actually not that precious—at least, not to me. It's just three hundred million dollars, am I right?"

Chapter 802

Jack's words rendered Irene, Lawrence, and the others speechless again. It was obvious that this fellow jacked up the price. Never mind that he extorted three hundred million dollars out of them, now he was actually saying that the medicine was not that precious.

"It truly isn't that precious. It's not expensive at all if it turns out to be effective for Mother. And it isn't that precious either, now that I think about it. After all, your head itself is probably worth three hundred million. It's a pretty good head to whack!"

Jayden said, laughing.

“Come. Let’s eat!”

Lawrence spoke, grinning. He knew what sort of a person his son was. Everyone smiled while Jayden spoke, as though he were cracking a joke, but if Jack’s medicine turned out to not be the least bit effective, and with the three hundred million dollars he made them spend, he would truly be digging his own grave.

Besides, if not for his wife cajoling them to meet the former belle of their class and to see how she was doing, he would not have wanted to come. It felt as though this meal was a waste of their precious time.

Fiona smiled. “You’re so humorous, Young Master Watson. You really know how to joke around!”

Here, she looked at Irene beside her. “I remember that the old master of the Watson family suffers from some strange disease,” she said. “After we finish eating, let’s get my son-in-law to take a look at him. He may be able to cure the old master!”

“Never mind about that. My grandfather had been undergoing treatment for a few months in America, and he still isn’t any better, even though their medical industry is so advanced. How could your son-in-law hope to cure him?”

“I’m already dubious about the slimming pill he said would help my mother lose weight. My grandfather is already so old. If he doesn’t cure my grandfather but kills him instead, he probably won’t die alone. He’ll be dragging you, Aunty, as well as that darling daughter of yours!”

Jayden swirled the glass of red wine in his hand, speaking slowly, a frosty smile on his lips.

It was a threat. Definitely a threat.

Fiona was a little frightened. She looked at Jack. "Jack, if you are unsure of this, don't do it," she said. "We'll just head back after we are done eating. After all, Old Master Watson's disease isn't any regular illness. He didn't even recover after receiving treatment overseas."

"I'm fine with it. I don't know Old Master Watson anyway!"

Jack shrugged his shoulders. He was truly fine with it. If Fiona had not bullied him into coming and diagnosing the Watson family, he would not have come.

Furthermore, the family put on such high airs. He really did not want to cure the old man.

"You're fine with it? I think you're just a quack. You know that you can't cure my grandfather's disease, so you're suddenly guilty."

Jayden flashed a mirthless smile. "But it's probably for the best. We came here to search for the best hospitals and the best specialists for treatment. How could someone like you compare to a specialist?"

Jack smiled after he heard that. "Indeed, there's no room for comparison. Because I don't even bother to compare myself to them. Sharon George had seen plenty of specialists here before, but they were all useless anyway."

"Really? I'm really curious now, did you learn western medicine or Chinese medicine?"

Lawrence smiled. "My father says that some of the Chinese medicine practitioners are pretty good. Honestly, I want to try it out—because I think that western medicine is the best. So much better than Chinese medicine. But the old man insists that Chinese medicine is better, that it could possibly cure his illness. So I want to look for a Chinese medicine practitioner this time and try it out to shatter his illusions about it!"

It was evident that Lawrence looked down on Chinese medicine, speaking as though it were completely good for nothing.

“I am a Chinese medicine practitioner. Your father has pretty good taste. The practice has been attracting less and less attention because there are less disciples of Chinese medicine now. Most medical students learn western medicine, totally oblivious about Chinese medicine!”

Jack gave a wan smile. “But Chinese medicine can cure plenty of diseases that western medicine can’t. I really think that Chinese medicine is much better than western medicine!”

“If that’s the case, why don’t you come over to our house and put your words into practice? It’s possible that you can’t even diagnose what disease he has. Grandpa will die speechless. Hah!”

Jayden actually guffawed.

Chapter 803

Jack frowned as he observed the grin on Jayden’s face. He felt as if the father and son duo did not care much about the old master’s illness.

Besides, they looked like they were finding doctors for the old master, but there was not a single trace of sorrow within them—it was hard to tell if the old master was on the verge of death.

“Sure. I’ll give it a shot since you two disregard Chinese medicine so much. I don’t have much to do anyway. I’ll just help to cure the old master then!”

Jack stretched his arms and spoke languidly.

His eyes were pinned onto Lawrence, who sat across him.

He quickly noticed that the corners of the other man's lips twitched when he mentioned that he would cure the old master. He was agitated.

However, his agitation quickly dissipated, as if it had never been there.

"All right. But how much will you charge us this time, Jack? You can't just do this for free, right? There should at least be a consultation fee, even if you can't treat him!"

Lawrence asked, smiling.

"Don't worry. I won't charge you anything this time, and I won't charge after I treat him. Why would I want to charge you, after all, I can demonstrate the miracles of Chinese medicine and show you how it's much better than western medicine!"

Jack spoke just as he was chewing on his food, so his words were muffled.

Soon enough, they all finished their meal. Fiona was slightly displeased at how Jack said that he would provide treatment for free, but she decided to remain silent when she thought about how he had taken three hundred million dollars earlier.

Not long after, they drove toward a villa.

"The old master is upstairs. I'll take you there. My sister has hired a specialist. I don't know if she's back!"

Jayden grinned as he spoke. He brought Jack and the others to the second floor.

Just as they arrived at the entrance, they saw the aforementioned specialist walking out of the room.

“Has he done the diagnosis? How did it go?”

Lawrence immediately stepped forward and asked when he saw this.

The specialist shook his head. “I couldn’t find anything. We’ve run all the scans we can with our machinery, but we didn’t find anything wrong. It’s so strange!”

“Ah. It looks like the doctors here are no good either!”

Jayden released a sigh.

Melinda twisted her lips into a bitter smile. “We still have to try no matter what. I’ll go to another hospital tomorrow and get someone over to diagnose him!”

It looked like Melinda was truly worried about her grandfather’s health. After she spoke, she even turned her head around to look at the old man lying on the bed in the room. Her brows were tightly furrowed.

“Let me take a look! I’m confident that I can treat him. I can see everything from a single glance.”

Jack smiled as he spoke.

Chapter 804

“No way. You can tell what the problem is just—just by looking at him?”

Melinda’s lips parted slightly. She was extremely shocked, suspecting that she had misheard him. She

looked at Irene. “Mom, who—who’s this? Is he a doctor?”

Irene nodded her head. “He’s my close friend’s son-in-law. He says that he’s a Chinese medicine practitioner. As for his medical skills, I’m not too sure of it myself!”

“What are you saying? I’m a specialist in this area, and I’ve treated many strange diseases before. I’ve got quite a good reputation in Eastfield. We couldn’t find a single problem even after running so many checks just now, and now you’re telling me that you can tell what’s wrong from a single glance? Bullsh*t!”

Jack’s words made the specialist feel as though he had just been punched in the ears. He was just about to leave with a few other doctors, and he was unhappy after hearing Jack’s words. He instantly wheeled around and spoke to Jack.

“You must be lying. Dr. Newman here is extremely experienced with near-death patients...”

Another doctor also straightaway told Jack.

After listening to the doctors saying all this, Melinda, who had been quite elated, suddenly sunk into a glum mood. She could not be sure of him now. The man looked young, and he did not perform any proper checkups. How could he diagnose anything from a glance?

“If my guess is correct, sir, he’s been poisoned!”

Jack smiled and told everyone.

As he said this, he purposely sidled his gaze toward Lawrence. Interestingly, the man’s expression contorted slightly when he heard this.

However, he quickly smiled. “No way. My father has been ill for so long. How could he have been poisoned?” he said. “He would have died long ago if he was.”

“Cough cough!”

The old master seemed agitated when he heard this. He immediately coughed twice, and blood spluttered out of his mouth.

“Grandpa!”

Melinda quickly ran over and used a tissue to mop up the blood. “Your illness is truly worsening, Grandpa. What should we do?”

After she said that, she ran back and grabbed Jack’s hand. “Sir, has my grandfather truly been poisoned? You can tell? Since you know that he’s been poisoned, can you tell what poison it is? You’ll know how to treat it, right? Don’t worry. Just treat him. We have the money for it if you do!”

Jack suddenly felt embarrassed, his hand being gripped by a woman—and a young woman in her early twenties, at that. He gently extricated his hand. “Miss Watson, I’ve just taken one look at him for now,” he said slowly. “I haven’t done a proper checkup on him, so I don’t know the full condition. I’ll need to take his pulse before I can be sure of anything!”

“All right. Please do so, sir!”

Melinda spoke excitedly, as though she were holding on to a lifeline.

“Stop talking rubbish. How could he have been poisoned? If poison were the case, how could we have completely missed it? The old master simply lacks strength now, and everything is normal besides from the fact that he coughs blood.”

Dr. Newman huffed indignantly.

They had been running the checkup for half a day now, using all sorts of machines to run a diagnosis, and still, they could not tell what was wrong with the old master. Now if a young upstart was able to tell everything from a single glance, it was akin to slapping all of them across the faces.

It would be extremely embarrassing if word of this got out!

Jack noticed that the specialist would not let the matter drop, so he said, "A piece of advice for you, leave now. At least you'll be spared of the embarrassment if I can really tell what's wrong!"

Chapter 805

"You!"

The doctors were all infuriated.

"All right. I'm going to give Old Master Watson a check-up now. No disturbances allowed. I just need one of you to remain. As for the rest of you, please go out and shut the door!"

In the end, Jack laced his fingers behind his back and spoke in a no-nonsense tone, "Miss Watson, please stay behind. The rest can go!"

"All right. Let's get out of here. We'll let Jack do the check-up properly!"

Lawrence's expression was dark. He took a long look at Jack, thinking that the young man would probably not be able to detect anything.

In a flash, everyone got out and Melinda closed the door behind. She then came before Jack. “Doctor, is there a reason why you asked me to stay behind?”

“Your grandfather can’t even talk properly now, right? His throat seems fine, but he just can’t seem to conjure the energy to speak. Is that right?”

Jack did not answer Melinda’s question; instead, he returned it with another question.

“That’s right. You—you haven’t even taken his pulse. And you know his condition so well!”

Melinda was even more surprised. She felt that it was possible that Jack had the potential to diagnose her grandfather.

The old master looked at Jack. He opened his mouth, wanting to say something, but he did not have the strength to do so. Nothing but silence rang out.

“Ah. I have a few things I do not wish to tell you. I fear that you would not be able to handle it!”

Jack released a breath. Then he added, “I told you to remain because I could tell that you have a pretty good relationship with the old master. I don’t trust anyone else!”

“What are you talking about, sir? You’re saying that my grandfather has been poisoned, and now you’re telling me you don’t trust anyone else. Don’t tell me, my father...”

It was obvious that Melinda was not an idiot. She quickly caught on and clamped a hand over her mouth in shock.

“No way. Why would he sabotage Grandpa?”

Melinda tried to remain as calm as possible, flashing Jack a bitter smile. “Actually, you didn’t have to worry all that much, sir. I can take it,” she said. “I’m the young mistress of this house, but they don’t like me all that much because I was adopted and raised by Grandpa. The person who loves me most in this family is my grandfather, and I really don’t want to see him die. If he does, I’ll have no relatives in the Watson family. I’m scared that they’ll bully me even more— they might even kick me out!”

Realization cracked over Jack. Now only did he understand why Melinda was so worried about her grandfather, why she loved him so much. So that was the nature of their relationship.

After he listened to her story, he smiled. “If that’s the case, I can relax now,” he said. “Then I can tell you a few things. I truly suspect that your father, Lawrence, or your brother has something to do with your grandfather’s poisoning. As for why, I do not know.”

Here, Jack paused to glance at the old man lying on the bed. “But I believe that the old master will know. Fortunately, I came today. If I had been two or three days late, it would be impossible to save your grandfather even if the gods themselves came!”

He walked over to the old master’s side. Jack whipped out a wooden box from his pocket and opened it, revealing plenty of silver needles within.

“I know you can hear me, sir. I’ll perform acupuncture on your first then you should be able to speak temporarily. But it’s only for a short while, and you won’t be able to talk much. You’ll have to rest well after that. I’ll write a prescription for your granddaughter in a while. She’ll go pick up the medicine, and you’ll have to use it in your bath. Soak yourself in the solution for half an hour every day. You should be able to fully recover if you continue for a month!”

Jack stuck a needle into the old master’s arm as he spoke.No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 806-810

Chapter 806

“That’s it?”

Melinda was taken aback for a while, then she spoke.

“The poison has been in his body for a long time now. It’s a very strange poison. It’ll only chip away at his life bit by bit. All the machinery that those western doctors use, won’t be able to detect anything. Even I could only use my medicine to seep through his skin bit by bit, slowly expelling the poison. There’s definitely no short-term solution to this!”

Jack explained, smiling wanly.

“If what you said about my father being the one who administered the poison is true, what should we do? He’ll definitely continue to administer the poison!”

Fear rippled throughout Melinda once she gave it a thought.

“Gasp!”

At this moment, the old master abruptly spat a mouthful of poisoned blood, and he regained the ability to speak.

He was extremely weak. When he spoke, his voice was harsh and gravelly. “That ungrateful b*stard! That good-for-nothing, backstabbing, lying moron! I really want to strangle him with my own two hands!”

“Grandpa, you can talk now! Tell me, why did Father poison you?”

Melinda immediately asked.

“That ungrateful pig! I advised him to stop doing unsavory business, to stop doing all sorts of monstrous deeds. He must have poisoned me in secret!”

The old master clenched his teeth. Fury practically steamed from his ears.

“When? Can you tell me, sir?”

Jack asked, looking at the old man.

“They came here for other reasons as well. They’re going to exchange goods with a group of people here—photos taken in secret, that sort of thing. Besides, Green Sky Hall kidnapped plenty of young women, and they’re going to use them for the exchange as well...”

The old man looked at Jack; a wry smile twisted his lips. “Why am I telling you all this? It’s no use telling you anyway. My son has zero consciences or remorse over what he does now.”

“Of course Green Sky Hall would continue to run this business. But I never thought that they would even kidnap young women to send to America!”

Jack clenched his fists when he heard what the old master had say. “They’re going to do the exchange tomorrow, is that right? I—I’ll make sure to wipe them out tomorrow!”

After he said that, he looked at the old master and spoke, “Rest and recover in peace, sir. You’ll get better. As for your son, he does deserve to die. Don’t worry. Unless he decides to not make an appearance tomorrow, he will definitely die!”

“And you are?”

The old master stared at Jack, confusion filling his gaze. Was this young fellow, not a doctor? Unless he was hiding some sort of terrifying secret identity.

“You won’t blame me, right, sir? If I kill your son.”

Jack posed a question, instead of answering the question.

The old master went silent for a few seconds. In the end though, he said, “He dug his own grave if he were to die. But he brought quite a few good fighters over here. I’m afraid that it’ll be difficult to kill him. Furthermore, Green Sky Hall is very powerful here. So I think that there is a huge possibility that you will die if you dare to meddle with this!”

“No need for you to worry about this, sir!”

Jack kept his needles. “I hope that you’ll be able to recover soon and live out the rest of your days in peace with your granddaughter. Once I open that door, I trust that both of you will pretend that you never heard whatever that I said, right?”

“Don’t worry. I don’t have a son anymore, anyway.”

It was obvious that the old master no longer cared. He had tried to stop his son from continuing down the wrong path, but he never thought that his son would actually try to kill him. This caused turmoil to roar within him.

After the old master spoke that last sentence, his voice gradually became hoarser, and soon he was back to not being able to speak again.

Meanwhile, Jack pondered for a moment. Then he brought Melinda over to the balcony. “Prepare yourself. Both Lawrence and Jayden are rotten to the core, but Irene might be okay,” he told her. “If they truly go for the exchange tomorrow, I’ll follow them and kill them.”

Chapter 807

Jack paused for a moment before continuing, “When the time comes, it’s obvious that Irene isn’t capable of managing Watson’s properties and companies, so you have to be ready to take over. I’m telling you in advance so that you’re prepared mentally as well.”

Melinda’s eyes roamed around the room upon hearing Jack’s words, then she responded, “Mr, thank you for reminding me. It’ll not be easy for me to take over alone. I, too, despise what they did. After I have taken over Watson’s business, I think I’ll sell off some assets and return to Daxia and start some investment business.”

“Hmmm...” Melinda paused for a second then continued, “Grandpa Watson wanted to return to Daxia a long time ago. I believe he will help me in managing the business after he gets well. And Grandpa can finally enjoy his twilight years happily and peacefully in our motherland, Daxia.”

“Mm!”

Jack’s eyes lit up immediately upon hearing Melinda’s plan. “I like your plan. It’s brilliant! All right then, I’ll open the door now!”

In the next moment, Jack stretched out his arm and opened the door of the room.

As soon as the door was opened, Lawrence, Jayden, and the others rushed in.

“How’s it? Did you manage to find out what kind of poison it is? Is there an antidote?”

A concerned look was hanging over Lawrence’s feature, his tone nervous.

Melinda—who was standing beside Jack—sneered coldly in her heart. If it were not from Grandpa

Watson himself, that Lawrence had planned to murder him, she would truly think that Lawrence was such a filial son who cared deeply about his old folk.

Now, the pretentious concern that the other party showed, was obviously revealing his interest in knowing whether Jack was able to treat Old Master Watson. His heart was uneasy; he fought hard against a rising panic that almost unmanned him. He was afraid that Jack could really cure Old Master Watson.

“Hmmm...I’m somewhat sure!” Jack smiled slightly in return.

“Really?”

Lawrence’s face sank at his words and his heart was in a complete state of panic.

Jack, however, added, “But I’m not too sure, I can only give it a try. I’ve given Melinda a Chinese medicine prescription. Old Master Watson needs to take a bath with the Chinese medicine for half an hour every day. After a month or two, only then you’ll witness the effect!”

“A month or two? So slow!”

The specialist—who stayed behind to witness the whole scene—jeered sarcastically, “You’re bragging, aren’t you? You know that they’re leaving Daxia soon, and even if the medicine is not effective on Old Master Watson, you have nothing to do with it anymore, and they can’t get back to you. Am I right about your wicked plan?”

Nonetheless, Jack chuckled in return. “Chinese medicine tends to take longer to be effective, I can’t help it!”

When Lawrence heard that Jack was not confident in treating Old Master Watson, the heavy boulder in his heart was lifted and he could finally breathe. This brat must be bragging about his medical skill and

Chinese medicine knowledge, so he definitely could not cure Old Master Watson's illness.

"Thank you so much then!"

Lawrence fist-to-palm saluted and thanked Jack.

Jack smiled nonchalantly, "You're welcome. Old Master Watson and I are fated to meet and I'm a person who is all about fate, hence I'll naturally save him if I can."

"Let's go! We'll go back first!" After saying his last words to Lawrence, Jack then turned toward Selena and Fiona, urging them to go back.

"All right! I'll see you off!"

Lawrence quickly walked Jack and the others to the door and saw them off.

The car with Jack and the others in it quickly drove off. Those specialists left as well.

"Dad, do you think he could really treat Grandpa's illness?"

Jayden was sweating in fear and concerns. "What if he really succeeds in curing Grandpa?"

"This poison that I've found was nothing but unique and strange. Most of the doctors in this world probably have not even heard of it. So, I don't believe that punk could really find an antidote!"

Lawrence grinned coldly. "Tomorrow is the trading day. Nothing is more important than that. We'll talk about this after tomorrow!"

Chapter 808

In the evening of that day, the men of Green Sky hall finally sensed something strange.

“Master, I have bad news! Three of our elites have gone missing!”

A middle-aged man presented before Hector Zaborowski and reported with his forehead frowning, “And I have gotten another news that not far from Jack’s residence, there were three men who were shooting pictures, were caught and killed. I strongly suspect that those three are our men, and they bumped into the adopted son-in-law and were killed by him, what do you think?”

“What!”

Hector shot up from his chair after hearing the shocking news. “What’s going on with these men? I’ve already told them multiple times to keep an eye on Jack and be careful not to be caught by him! Now what? Trying to show off their bravery by filming the girls near Jack’s residence? Weren’t they looking for death?”

The middle-aged man’s face dulled and darkened. He asked in a worrisome tone, “Master Zaborowski, that punk is hot-headed and impulsive. He killed our men without thinking twice; it’s obvious that we’re nothing in his eyes!”

He paused for a moment before continuing, “I’m not worried about the three men who got killed instead what worries me is that the punk would come at us like last time! You’ve promised that you’d not continue this deed anymore, and now he found out that we’re still doing it, I’m afraid that he will not let us go this time.”

The corners of Hector’s mouth twitched involuntarily. “Gather all the elite fighters here! We have to stop him from coming to our hall. On top of that, I’ll go to my elder brother and ask for some excellent fighters from Kingston hall to stay guard here. I’ll just tell him that we’re short of manpower these couple of days!”

The middle-aged man breathed out a huge sigh of relief when he heard Master Zaborowski's plan. "That's a good idea! If we can get a few top-notch hitmen from Kingston Hall, that would be excellent! After all, Kingston Hall hired a bunch of good fighters, and they were never short of manpower!"

"We really have to guard against the crazy brat. Tell our men the same too, they should change their location if they want to continue filming in secret! All right. You may leave now."

Hector gestured to the middle-aged man to leave. "The big boss from America is here, and we're going to trade with them tomorrow night. We can't have any slip-ups at this point!"

...

At night, after Jack returned home, he rang Lana secretly, asking her to get Queenie to observe every movement of the Watson family, and report to him instantly once numerous of the Watsons left the residence.

Queenie squeaked in happiness that she was almost paralyzed with happiness when she understood that Jack—the Supreme Warrior—had given her a task personally. This was an honor to her.

Moreover, the Supreme Warrior had ordered them to come along with him to the scene to warm up. He was afraid that there would be fish that had slipped through the net—runaway, as both parties would bring many people with them.

The next day soon came, Jack, on the other hand, had been waiting patiently for news.

It was only at night, almost nine o'clock, that he received a call from Queenie, informing him that the Watson's men had left the area, and it looked like they were planning to go out of town.

Jack ordered Queenie to tail behind them and keep him informed of their movement at all times. He then contacted Lana right after and both of them headed toward the outskirts of the city together.

In an abandoned factory not far from the city, many elites from Green Sky hall were stand-guarding and waiting here quietly.

For the exception of Hector Zaborowski from the Green Sky Hall, there were more than 400 people in the factory—several top-notch hitmen, and the rest were some powerful upper-range fighters. They were all gathered here tonight.

Behind them were a bunch of young girls and each of them was stunning and alluring.

These women—around a hundred of them—were crouching on the ground in fear. Their body wobbling in terror and none of them dared to move an inch.

“This batch of girls is of good quality. The people of America are truly fortunate this time, they can enjoy these good quality women.”

Elder Ward smiled blandly. In his hand, there was a flash drive.

“This time we have to make them pay at least 150 million, less than that amount is a no-no! Our women coupled with these photos we took, it has to be worth at least 150 million!”

Elder Castellano snarled bitterly. She was leaning on her cane as usual.

“Of course!”

Two bulky men behind Elder Castellano laughed out loud. One of them said with a smile, “Unfortunately, this time the trading time will be short. Otherwise, there are a few hot chicks here that I really wanted

to have a taste!”

At this time, Lawrence—the master of the Watson family together with his son, Jayden have arrived at the abandoned factory. Behind them were hundreds of their men.

“Ha-Ha! It’s been a long time!”

Chapter 809

Elder Ward guffawed unimpressively as he faced the other party.

“You’re right, it’s been a long time. And I heard that this time, you got us some good quality stuff. Let me take a closer look!”

Lawrence chuckled in return.

“The quality is indeed good. And nowadays such quality of young and pretty girls is really not easy to find anymore. Some of us have even gone to other cities to capture them!”

Elder Ward let out another laugh and continued, “Take a good look this time. Some of them are as good-looking as beauty queens in those beauty contests, and you can earn a lot out of them. So, this time our Master has said that the trading price has to be increased, at least 150 million for this batch of goods.

“What? It was always around 100 million or 110 million. You guys are asking too much this time!”

Lawrence’s face sank and darkened.

“No, no, no. Not too much at all! I believe the money that these ladies will bring you would be more than ten times of 150 million!”

Elder Ward, on the other hand, chortled at Lawrence's remark.

"How about 130 million dollars?"

Lawrence countered with a price after giving some thought to the matter.

"Wow! Boss Watson, do you have to? You should increase the price to 10 billion since you're filthy rich!"

A familiar voice rang out from nowhere at this time. From the doorway not far from the crowd, came out a silhouette—Jack White.

"What the hell? Who is this f*cker? Aren't there a few sentries outside?"

One of the bodyguards of the Watson family exclaimed deafeningly.

"The sentries? Of course, they're now with the Grim Reaper!"

Jack shrugged his shoulders nonchalantly.

Soon, two more silhouettes behind Jack walked out from the dark, slowly appearing into the crowd's eyes.

"What? No way! It's Lana, the Goddess of War, and another, she seems to be the Queen of War!"

Elder Castellano from the Green Sky Hall gasped and had her jaw drop to the ground when the two women appeared before her.

Jack's sudden arrival had already made her heart pounded frantically and worries washed over her face.

However, the overwhelming number of great fighters from both Watson's and their side was like a shot in the arm— it boosted the confidence in her. Besides, Green Sky Hall had borrowed three top-notch killers from the Kingston Hall. Hence, in her point of view, it should not post any problem to kill Jack.

Nevertheless, what slipped from her calculation was the arrival of the Goddess of War and the Queen of War.

“Hell no! Did you say the Goddess of War and the Queen of War are here?”

Lawrence from the Watson family was so frightened that his face blanched instantly. He was not afraid of Jack, but the arrival of these two women had almost wet his pants.

Although they brought mountains of great fighters with them, they were not frightened even if a King of War came but to confront the Goddess of War whom they were not known of her fighting prowess, they were frightened to death.

After all, they had never fought with a God-like existence like Lana before, though the fighters they had were amongst the top in the world.

“Master Watson, it was you who exposed your whereabouts and drew them here, right?”

Elder Castellano and the others' faces sank and dulled as she spoke in a frosty-cold voice.

Chapter 810

“Me? It's definitely not me! I think it's you guys who exposed your whereabouts!”

A vortex of anger swirled inside Lawrence as he barked at the people from the Green Sky Hall. "You guys have been living in Eastfield for so long, it must have been your people who were so careless that you guys exposed the location!"

Elder Ward and Elder Castellano exchanged glances, both of them felt guilty in their hearts. After all, Jack this motherf*cker had warned them before about their dirty deed. It was just that their Master promised that he would not do such deed anymore but still gave an order to continue these dirty trades underground.

Besides, he killed three of their men three days ago.

They initially thought that this guy would charge into Green Sky Hall and teach them a lesson, however, they never expected for him to find out their trade tonight and actually came here.

"I think it's you! Hmph! Our trading location has never been revealed before, how come Jack could find us this time? There is no such coincidence!"

A man from the Green Sky Hall faced the Watsons and snorted coldly. They refused to take the blame as well.

Sheepish glances were exchanged between Lawrence and Jayden; they were guilt-ridden. After all, they met with Jack last night and who knew Jack would find out their whereabouts and brought along a God of War and a King of War? Inside their heart, they knew that it was them who had exposed the location, which led to the current situation.

"Wow. Most amusing drama show I've ever witnessed. Do you think this is the time to talk about this?"

Jack, on the other hand, sneered frostily. "It doesn't matter who exposed the location, it's not important now. The Grim Reaper is coming to y'all!"

“Who are you? Why are you going against us?”

A cold face was plastered on Lawrence as he shot Jack a vicious stare.

“What did I say? It doesn’t matter anymore, right? The Goddess of War is here with me tonight, it also means that tonight will be your last night on the earth!”

“Kill them all!” Jack waved his hand, sending orders to Lana and Queenie.

Elder Ward and Elder Castellano finally knew what real terror was. They were completely shocked at the sight before them. Jack had actually shouted toward the Goddess of War, moreover, he was the one who gave the order to kill? Did this not mean that the Goddess of War had listened to him?

“Dang it! We’ll fight them! There’s only three of them, I don’t believe that with the number we have, we can’t defeat them!”

Elder Ward gritted his teeth as he yelled toward his men.

“Ah!”

A big and muscular man—who was borrowed from the Kingston Hall—squatted on the ground and stomped on the ground like a sumo. A deep pit formed on the ground; the big guy made a huge pit with just a stomp. He was on his feet again, and his eyes were full of raw rage. Then he kicked backward, leaping toward Jack at a lightning speed.

“Go to hell, motherf*cker!”

The big man let out a sharp huff, with his balled fist, he charged toward Jack's direction. The scene was terrifying.

"Damn, such a terrific speed! He has the speed of a King of War, I guess!"

Jack was surprised at the big man's speed as well. He did not expect an elite from the Kingston Hall to be this powerful and terrifying. If the opponent of this big man was not Jack but others, they were definitely not on par with him.

Nonetheless, Jack clenched his fist firmly and collided with the other party's fist head-on.

The ferocious attack of the big man was suddenly nullified and he was sent backward a few meters, knocking down whoever behind the big man that was charging toward Jack. His momentum was only halted after knocking down dozens of men.

The big man spurt out a mouthful of blood; the red colored liquid was covering his philtrum and his face went white. And those guys who were knocked down by him were heavily injured as well. Some of them spewed blood like the big man and went down.

"What the f*ck! How strong is him!"

Elder Castellano was weighed down by dread that color drained from her face. Realization finally hit her face hard, that last time Jack had definitely not used his full strength when he was fighting with her. This man was too powerful, no, he was the Grim Reaper to be exact.

On the other side, Lana and Queenie were like wolves hunting in a flock of sheep—ferocious, swift, and certain. Those who were struck by them died instantly without registering what had happened.No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chaptet 811-815

Chapter 811

A cold and mirthless smile twisted on Jack's mouth. He flipped his palm and dozens of silver needles appeared on his palm. He swung his arm toward the enemy; a horde of men immediately dropped onto the floor, the needles piercing straight through their skulls. More than a dozen men died instantly, and there were a number of elite fighters among them.

"It's not looking good. Retreat!"

Elder Castellano immediately felt that something was wrong. A swing movement from Jack killed two extremely strong fighters from the Kingston Hall in a blink of an eye. Such terrifying combat prowess was not something they could fight back.

In just a few seconds, more than a hundred of their men were murdered and the number of fallen bodies was still rapidly decreasing. They have brought five hundred men for God's sake!

A stomp of Jack's leg sent him to the front of a gate, blocking the route. Lana and Queenie, on the other hand, blocked another two exits. They were blocking every possible escape route, not leaving any chance for them to flee.

Blood splattered. No matter which Hall or Family—Green Sky Hall or Watson family—they were from, their final destination was the same—hell.

"Jack, please, I beg you, please let us go! My-my wife and your mother-in-law are close friends, aren't they? Not to mention that you and I just had a decent dinner together last night!"

The still-alive Lawrence, watching each and every one of his men fall onto the ground at lighting speed, started to plead for mercy. He was in a complete state of panic that he knelt before Jack.

Jayden, too, plopped onto the ground and begged, "Jack, we were wrong, we know we were completely wrong. Didn't we just meet last night? Do you want money? I can give everything to you, please spare us!"

Jack stretched out his arm the moment he heard their beseech. The silver needles that dashed through the wind and nailed on a wall afar before, had miraculously ricocheted off the wall and returned into his palm.

“Spare your life? Didn’t you say that the air abroad is sweeter and fresher than the air over here? That you feel disgusted just by breathing in the air of Daxia?”

Jack let out an icy-cold laugh; his sight slowly moved away from Jayden to Lawrence. “And a b*stard like you, who poisoned his own father, is not even qualified to continue living in this world, let alone ‘use’ the air. Let’s be environmentally friendly and not waste the air, okay?”

“I, I didn’t...”

Lawrence was frightened down to the soles of his shoes; his voice was thick with fear. How on earth did Jack find out the poison plan, how did he know about it?

“Your old man has filled me in from A to Z. He tried to stop you from doing this dirty business, that’s why you poisoned him so that he won’t be a thorn in your flesh. Oh, I’ve also informed him that I’ll take your life!”

Jack waved his palm, silver needles flew out again, cutting through the air and piercing through dozens of men of Green Sky Hall who were behind Lawrence and Jayden and not far from his spot. All of them plonked down onto the ground simultaneously in an instant. Jack ended their lives.

After another ten seconds or so, the rest of the men fell one after another. Only Queenie bore a minor surface wound on her arm, whereas the bunch of young girls—hundred or so—crouched on the ground in fear; with their body trembling, their face was ashen, and their eyes were wild with terror.

“These sons of b*tches. How could they...”

Lana was seething with anger at the sight of these weak and powerless young girls.

The three of them quickly came forward before the girls.

“It’s alright now, don’t be afraid! We’re here to save you, you’re free!”

Jack glanced at these girls and finally opened his mouth.

“Really? Oh My God, they’re here to save us! Thank you!”

A woman from the group came forward and plopped onto the ground. She knelt before the three and kept kowtowing, “Thank you! Thank you so much! You’re our saviors!”

“Thank you, thank you, saviors!”

The others imitated the woman; they, too, knelt before the three and kept kowtowing to thank them.

“It’s okay. You’re free, go home now!”

Jack waved his hand, and only then did those women stand up, and one by one, they left the horrific place.

Jack, Lana, and Queenie strode outside the abandoned factory, Jack then lit a fire and burned the entire factory into ashes.

“Should we finish off the people over at the Green Sky Hall?”

Lana asked Jack. The blazing fire was burning ferociously in front of them.

After giving some thought to the matter, Jack shook his head. “They lost a lot this time. Many of their men died, including those elite fighters. What’s remained of the Green Sky hall is merely those useless shrimps and the head of the hall. So, basically, Green Sky Hall is destroyed. They have their shell, but their soul is gone! Today’s incident will be a lesson for them. Keep an eye on them and let’s see what their reactions are in the next few days!”

Jack paused and then only added, “After all, there’s a Kingston Hall behind the Green Sky Hall. If we kill the head of the Green Sky Hall and the rest of their men, I’m afraid that Kingston Hall will not let it go easily. They will definitely intervene!”

Lana bobbed to show her agreement. “Indeed, there’s no evidence left here today, so at most, they’ll suspect you. Let’s see if they’ll stop right here. But if they’re looking for death, the fault is not on us!”

“Good job, guys! Both of you did great!”

Jack flashed Lana and Queenie a warm and genuine smile as he praised them.

“It’s nothing at all! It’s my greatest honor to be at your service, my Supreme Warrior. Please count me in if you have any similar tasks like this today!”

Queenie gazed at Jack with signs of admiration and respect in her eyes.

Jack gave a small smile and took out a tiny bottle of medicinal cream from his pocket. “Take this, your arm is injured! Apply it to your wound and it will heal in no time. You can keep the rest as a backup!”

“Woo-hoo! That’s amazing! Thank you so much, Sir!”

Queenie could barely conceal her excitement. “You’re the Master of the divine doctor, Ethan Hays, so this medicine must be effective and precious. It’s truly my honor to be granted personally such a treasure by the Supreme Warrior. Even if I die because of it, it’d be totally worth it!”

“What nonsense are you spewing? Don’t say such things, okay!”

Jack did not know whether to cry or to laugh at the two ladies before him. He then intervened, “It’s okay for you to call me Supreme Warrior since there’s no outsider here. But in the future, if there are others around, you should remember not to call me that but only Jack!”

“Got it! The Supreme Warrior doesn’t want to reveal his identity!”

Queenie laughed wholeheartedly in return.

Soon enough, the three left the place and went back to their home separately.

At this time, at the Watson’s residence, Melinda could not sleep at all. She knew clearly in her heart that what Jack had uttered to her last night was not at all fake nor false.

Therefore, Lawrence and Jayden’s failure to return home would have huge consequences.

The old master looked much better after taking the medicinal bath yesterday. It seemed that the medicine that Jack had prescribed was truly effective. Perhaps he would be able to speak in a few days.

The seconds ticked past. When morning broke, the many men from the Watson family that had gone out did not return. A smile played at the corners of Melinda’s lips.

“Strange. Why aren’t they back?”

Frowning, Irene stared out of the window. “What business were they discussing? They’ve even kept it from me. And why haven’t they come home even though it’s been a full night?”

Melinda walked over to Irene’s back. “Don’t worry, Mother,” she said, smiling. “Maybe they’ll come back in the afternoon!”

Although she comforted Irene with those words, Melinda was well aware that Jayden and the others would never return.

Chapter 813

However, who was that man they saw yesterday. Lawrence went out with many powerful masters and none of them came back yet. This showed how scary that person was.

“Did something happen? Why aren’t they back yet?” By now, Hector had a darkened expression on his face. He had a bad feeling as he stayed home and was waiting for them to come back.

This time, they sent 400 people and all of them were elites. Around four to five masters went with them and they were also joined by two to three masters from Kingston Hall. He had never arranged for such a huge group of elites to work together.

However, Elder Castellano and the others were supposed to be back latest before dawn but they were nowhere to be seen.

He immediately sent his subordinates to the trading place to find out. His face turned pale when he heard the news they had for him.

The abandoned factory had already been reduced to ashes and none of their people came back. They were obviously killed and their bodies were also destroyed!

“Master, what...what should we do about this?” A middle-aged man who was beside Hector looked at him worryingly. “Who is this man? Why is he so powerful? Is he some huge influence?”

Hector smiled bitterly. “Huge influence? We didn’t offend any powerful people. Apart from that, we’ve always had a great relationship with the other clans. As for the aristocratic families, they don’t cause us trouble so this possibility is very low!” He paused here before continuing what he was saying. “The only person we offended was the guy named Jack White. Apart from that, he killed three of our people. The only thing I want to know right now is how he knew about our trading place? Apart from that, did he kill all our people by himself?”

“How’s that possible? Didn’t that guy fight with Elder Castellano and the others? Although Elder Castellano was not his opponent, they would have been able to kill him if the entire team worked together, right? Especially when the masters from Kingston Hall were also there? They would have been able to kill that guy if they used the human wave attack, right?” The middle-aged man in front of Hector was in disbelief. He felt that Hector had thought too highly of that young man.

“I’ve felt that this young man was not a simple person when he dared to come to Green Sky Hall previously. I’ve never seen someone with his level of confidence. I’ve seen many great people but I’ve never seen someone so confident!” Hector frowned.

“What should we do then? We can’t get revenge even though we’ve suffered such a huge loss? Master, how should you explain this to our boss? You’ve borrowed so many masters from him and if he knows that they’re all dead, he would not be able to hold back his anger!” The middle-aged man thought about it and said.

“I feel that it’s best to not offend this guy named Jack!” Hector sighed.

In several seconds, his eyes brightened as he remembered something. “Oh yes, didn’t the people from the Eagle Clan want to work together with us? I did not agree with it and asked them to contact the Wilson family. I wonder if they did that or do they have any plans against Jack. I think we should arrange

a meeting with them first!”

“Oh yes, master! That is a good idea!” The middle-aged man felt that this was a good plan too.

Soon, Hector went to the Eagle Clan with a dozen subordinates.

...

At the same time, Cecilia Taylor and Kelly Gold were standing in front of the grandest hotel in town, a seven-star hotel.

“Honey, you really plan to have our wedding dinner here? This place must be super expensive!” Cecilia said but was secretly happy about it. Others would definitely be envious of her because of this wedding.

Chapter 814

“Haha, of course! This is the best hotel here! I want to book the entire top floor. It’s a huge plaza and definitely suitable for a wedding!” Kelly laughed and continued saying. “However, the venue upstairs is slightly expensive and I heard that the booking fee for the venue alone is two hundred million!”

“Really? That...that’s quite expensive, right? Why don’t we change to another venue on another floor?” Cecilia was saying that while feeling very moved. After all, Kelly’s intention was all that mattered.

“No way!” Kelly rejected straightforwardly. “We are only getting married once. Apart from that, didn’t Jack advertise that he’s holding a city-rocking birthday party for his wife? If that’s the case, our wedding needs to be even more grand. Haha, our wedding will be the city-rocking event instead and he will be the ashamed one!”

Kelly was obviously unhappy about what happened the other day. Not only did Jack win 90 million from him but most importantly, he also lost eight bodyguards that day. This caused him to lose his pride.

He wanted to show himself off in front of the Taylors that night. Who knew that...

Hence, he definitely needed to put on a good show this time around.

“What you said makes sense. I’ve always felt that Selena is not as pretty as me but all the young masters like her. They even said that she’s the prettiest woman in Eastfield. I’ve always felt that those people were wrong. I was still young and was not as pretty as I am now at that time.” Cecilia curled her hands into fists as she spoke. “This time, I definitely want to be the brightest presence in the entire city on that day! I want to be the most glamorous person in Eastfield. No! In the world!”

Kelly, who was beside her, was embarrassed by what she said. Truthfully speaking, he felt that even to this day, Cecilia was still not as pretty as Selena. Cecilia lacked certain femininity and it was not something that could be easily obtained.

He would have gone after Selena too if she was not older, married, and with a child. However, he felt that the chances were quite slim as there were many young masters who still refused to give up on Selena.

Hence, he chose Cecilia under these circumstances. After all, Cecilia had a good body, was a lady from a prestigious family, and was slightly younger. In conclusion, Cecilia was the best choice apart from Selena.

“Okay, let’s book the top floor. Let’s go and pay the deposit!” Kelly smiled and the two of them soon found the manager of this hotel.

“I’m so sorry but I’m afraid that the day Sir and Madam chose would not be available!” The manager frowned after she heard what they said.

“Why? I know that the top floor of your hotel is a huge an expensive venue. Unless some rich families are holding some important events, nobody would book the top floor. Hence, the venue would normally be available!” Kelly was slightly unhappy when he heard this.

"I'm so sorry but the venue would be available if you book another day but we really cannot make any adjustments for the day that you have in mind. Somebody had already booked the venue several days earlier!" The female manager laughed and said calmly.

"Several days earlier? Why can't this person choose another day? Why did they have to choose the same day as us? I'm so angry!" Cecilia was extremely angry as she was very clear what it meant to successfully book the top floor of this best hotel. This was the most romantic and grandest place as it overlooks the whole scenery of Eastfield at night and the lighting are known to very beautiful. By then, Selena would only feel self-abased.

Chapter 815

"Could it be Jack who booked the place? Their event is on the same day as our wedding!" Kelly took in a breath as he recalled something.

"No way! How's that possible?" Cecilia immediately said. "If this happened previously, he still had some money with him. However, the Taylor family suffered a loss because he hit Young Master Timothy and they lost the South City project. In order to save face and maintain their relationship, Jack transferred one hundred million to the Taylor family!"

Cecilia paused here before continuing. "So I think that he only has one hundred million if we include the ninety million he won from you previously!"

"I see... Didn't he transfer the ninety million to his mother-in-law? I wonder if Fiona would return the money to him?!" Kelly thought about it and said.

"Oh yes!" Cecilia had a sudden realization. "I almost forgot that Jack had already given the money to Fiona. I know Fiona well and she definitely wouldn't take out the money given to her. She would rather let Jack lose face and fail to hold a grand birthday party compared to giving him her money!"

"If it's not Jack, who is it? I haven't received news about any events held by other families!" Kelly looked

at the female manager and asked. "Manager White, I wonder if you can provide us with some information?" In Kelly and Cecilia's opinion, this was a small issue. Providing information to Kelly meant giving the Gold family face and getting into the Gold family's good books.

However, they had no idea that Manager White would shake her head. "I'm so sorry to both of you as we need to keep the information a secret! We can't tell anyone about it yet, but we can let you know that the venue has been booked by an extremely important person!"

Kelly smiled, took several thousand dollars from his pockets, and handed it over. "Manager White, please accept our token of appreciation and it should be fine to give us a hint, right? After all, we're not here to ruin their event, right?"

"Young Master Gold, it's best if you take your money back. This time, it's not about money. If I provide you with the information, I would definitely be fired. This is my general manager's orders because this person has a very special identity!" The manager smiled.

"If that's the case, just take the money and tell me if Jack White and Selena Taylor are the ones who booked the place?!" Kelly refused to give up and stuffed the money into the manager's hands.

Although he was sure that it was not them as they did not have the money to come up with the three hundred million venue fee. However, he had to be absolutely sure.

"Alright!" The female manager looked around before placing the money into her pocket. "I can only tell you that the person who booked the top floor is not the Selena Taylor and Jack White that you mentioned!"

Kelly and Cecilia looked at each other when they heard this. They secretly relaxed and felt lucky that it was not them! No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 816-820

Chapter 816

It was obvious that Kelly and Cecilia unknowingly achieved the understanding that whatever they had to do, it had to best Jack and Selena's party.

Kelly, after placing some thought to it, voiced his opinion, "If that's the case, let's book the other floors! I heard that the level under the top floor is quite good. There are huge French windows and is quite beautiful, too!"

However, Manager White had a strange expression on her with a bitter smile to boot. "I'm really sorry to you both, but that floor has been booked. In fact, the entire hotel is booked on that day."

Kelly and Cecilia gasped in shock. "How's that possible? The entire hotel?!" they both exclaimed. "How much does that cost? Your boss wouldn't have agreed to it without going for at least two billion, right? This is a seven-star hotel!"

"That's right. Who is this person anyway? They're so rich!" Cecilia was rather envious as the top floor was the most expensive while the lower floors were cheaper the lower they were. Regardless, the fact remained that it was rather overboard to book the entire hotel.

"It didn't cost that much, truthfully. My boss only asked for one billion from these people! Consider it as a fifty percent discount!" The pretty manager laughed. "This is the first time I've encountered such a huge discount throughout my years of working here!"

"Fifty percent discount?" Kelly and Cecilia were once again surprised by the information relayed by the manager.

Cecilia thought about it before asking again, "Aren't you afraid that the other party will rent this place out after you've given them such a huge discount?"

"Don't worry. That won't happen!" The manager chuckled. "The customer booked the entire hotel because it's much more convenient for the clients to enjoy our facilities, especially the swimming pool and gym on the second floor. They can enjoy everything in the hotel to their hearts' content!"

“It’s a fifty percent discount! It seems that the other party is a very powerful person. The hotel wouldn’t have given a second-class aristocratic family a fifty percent discount!” Kelly frowned and grew increasingly curious. He wondered who this mysterious person was who booked the entire hotel.

“Young Master Gold, I’ve already told you a lot of information, and I can’t disclose anything anymore. You have a choice to either change your date or the hotel,” concluded Manager White with a smile.

Although Kelly and Cecilia were displeased with the turn of events, they could only nod before they left the hotel.

Once the two reached the plaza, Cecilia turned around and looked at the famous hotel behind her and remarked, “I wonder who that person is. He’s so powerful that he gets a fifty percent discount. The original price to book the entire hotel is two billion, yet he only needed one billion to make it happen!”

Kelly, on the other hand, sighed. “What can we even do? I never thought something like this could happen. Who knew that we’d clash dates with some powerful people!” Kelly frowned and thought about it carefully before he said, “Still, something doesn’t seem right to me. The four main families and the Drake family don’t seem to have any important events around this time, right?”

Cecilia thought about it before she replied, “Could it be the clans? Maybe somebody from a huge clan is getting married, and they happened to choose the same day as us?”

Kelly thought about it for some time, but he could not put a finger on it; on who could have made the reservation. In the end, he merely offered a wane smile as he commented, “Well, it doesn’t matter who it is. This is a good thing!”

Cecilia was immediately unhappy when she heard this. “How is this a good thing? Are you thinking that this helps you to save money? Are you telling me that you’re not really sincere when you say that you’d like to have our wedding on the top floor?”

Chapter 817

Kelly instantly hugged Cecilia by the waist upon hearing her comment. “Babe, what are you talking about?” said Kelly. “If I didn’t want to have our wedding on the top floor, I wouldn’t have mentioned it in the first place, right? Why should I even go into the hotel and find someone to make reservations? I’m actually thinking that since somebody arranged such a huge event here, many rich businessmen and powerful people will attend the event, right?” Kelly had a cold smirk on his face before he added, “By then, many people would also come to our wedding. Don’t you think Jack would be ashamed when he learned that somebody actually booked the entire hotel? I’m sure that not many people would attend his event!”

Cecilia finally realized that she had misunderstood Kelly, and her eyes lit up. “That’s right! Why didn’t I think of that? Now that somebody booked the entire seven-star hotel, how can Jack and Selena stun the entire city? This place is considered as the highest facility in town!”

“That’s right! Jack is bound to feel ashamed since he paid so much on advertising the event!” Kelly was downright pleased at the revelation. Since somebody played a hand in making things difficult for Jack and shaming him, did that not mean he had no need to host his wedding in such a high profile way? He only needed to make sure that what he did was better than what Jack was doing!

“Also, their advertisements have cooled down within these few days, and they’ve stopped advertising in certain places. I think Jack is running out of money, and that’s why he’s not able to continue advertising the event,” came Cecilia’s eventual reply after being quiet for some time.

“Hey, I have a good idea!” Kelly patted himself on his head. “Since the event is just several days away, why don’t I cash out ten to twenty million and advertise the event for him? The more we advertise about the event, the more ashamed Jack will get later on!”

“Great idea, honey! This is such a great idea!” Cecilia said in excitement.

Kelly then shifted his gaze and, looking at the hotel opposite of where they were, said, “By the way, this hotel located next door is a six-star hotel. It’s almost the same height as the seven-star hotel, and the top floor is a nice venue to be in. Booking the venue is quite expensive, at around one hundred and eighty million. Such a place would definitely bring honor to you and the Taylor family!”

“Honey, you really spoil me! I love you so much!” Cecilia threw her arms around Kelly’s neck and kissed him.

“Let’s go! I want you to be the prettiest bride of the day!” Kelly had his hands around Cecilia as they walked forward. “Oh, of course. Let’s go pick out a wedding dress later! I need to give you a stunning dress!”

At that moment, Fiona was on a shopping trip with several bodyguards, and she—upon spotting them—walked toward Kelly and Cecilia with a smile on her face. “Cecilia, what are you two lovebirds doing here? You guys look so sweet!”

Cecilia immediately replied with a smile when she noted that it was Fiona. “That’s for sure! How can we not be deeply in love when we’re getting married soon? By the way, didn’t that son-in-law who married into your family said that he’ll be hosting a city-stirring birthday party for Sister Selena? There are only a few days left until Selena’s birthday, right? How are the preparations going? Did he book a hotel?”

Fiona’s facial expression turned solemn upon hearing Cecilia’s question. Jack had been staying at home for the recent few days, and he even followed her to the Watson family mansion yesterday. How would he have had time to book a hotel?

The only change she noticed was that Jack bought some accessories for Selena.

“I... I think he hasn’t booked a hotel yet. I’m actually not very sure about this,” came Fiona’s sheepish reply, one that matched the embarrassed smile on her face.

“There’s not much time left, and he still hasn’t booked a hotel? Is it not important to him after all? Does he want to repeat what happened five years ago, with having a simple dinner at home? If he does that with all the advertisements in town, that’d be quite city-stirring!” Cecilia immediately started mocking Fiona. “Of course, this would mean that your family would be humiliated by the entire Eastfield. That’s city-stirring on its own too, right?”

Chapter 818

“That’s right! Why didn’t I think of that? So this is what Jack meant when he said ‘city stirring’, huh? I thought he meant that he’d be hosting a glamorous event! Had he been joking with us the whole time?” boasted Kelly as he crossed his arms at his chest.

Fiona was extremely embarrassed. She would not have walked over to greet them if she knew they would mock her.

Fiona thought about it for some time before she changed the topic of their conversation. “This is something I leave in the young people’s hands. I believe that Jack has his own plans. By the way, have you guys already booked your venue?”

“No, but we’re here to book our hotel today,” answered Kelly, smilingly as he did. “We have our eyes on this six-star hotel, and we plan to book the top floor!”

“The top floor!” Fiona took in a cold breath when she heard Kelly’s reply. “I heard that the venue’s booking fee costs one hundred eighty-eight million, eight hundred and eighty thousand. Not only is it a huge venue, but it even has a sight-seeing area together with a see-through class sight-seeing platform. Apart from that, the entire roof of that floor is made from glass, giving people a view of the sky. There are only three of such glamorous hotels in town!”

“Well, what should I say? This is my wedding with Cecilia, so we need to make it a grand one. Apart from that, the Gold family isn’t short of money, right?” Kelly sighed and said with a smile.

“Jack said that he’s going to give Selena the best birthday party ever. I think that what he prepares needs to be better than us if he wants to be the best. Right, honey?” quipped Cecilia.

“That’s right. How would it live up to the city-stirring claims if it isn’t?” commented Kelly enigmatically.

“Ahem! It’s best if you guys hurry and book your hotel. I’ll have to go now so I can continue running my errands.” Fiona’s expression was gradually turning bitter. She smiled embarrassingly, waved her hand, and walked away angrily with her bodyguards in tow.

It was only after they walked a considerable distance away did one of the beautiful bodyguards comforted Fiona, “Auntie, don’t get angry. Don’t you worry about anything. Our master would definitely keep his promise!”

“Keep his promise, you say? How much money does he have with him? How can he compete with them when he’s only got three hundred million from yesterday? Their venue booking fees are already around two hundred million, and it doesn’t include expenses!” Fiona laughed. “Jack really is one of a kind. People always say to do things according to one’s abilities. He’s incapable yet likes to boast all the time. He even advertised about the event all over town! I feel really ashamed even if he doesn’t! I don’t see him doing anything even as we’re fast approaching my daughter’s birthday!” Fiona walked toward a mall as she was speaking, and she eventually reached a jewelry shop.

She glanced at the shop and was startled. “How’s that possible? That...that diamond necklace that costs nine hundred million has been sold?”

It only occurred to Fiona yesterday about her mistake. The necklace cost 9 billion instead of 900 million.

However, there was an announcement at the entrance of this jewelry store saying that the necklace has been purchased by a mysterious buyer.

It was by reflex that Fiona thought that Fiona assumed the person spent 9 billion for the necklace. “Nine billion for a necklace! That’s rather extravagant!”

Chapter 819

“I wonder who the extravagant rich person is!” blurted one of the beautiful bodyguards.

“That person truly is a rich person,” Fiona resounded. “It hurts when we compare ourselves with other

people. How can they be so rich?! Why is my daughter not fated to marry such a rich person? She's married to that troublesome Jack, and the money he works hard to get is used to resolve those problems."

With bitterness looming over her, Fiona eventually left after she walked around for a short while.

...

She immediately spotted Jack and Selena leisurely drinking coffee upon reaching home, and this caused her expression to turn more sour than it was.

"Jack, there are only a few days till my daughter's birthday, right? Have you booked the hotel?" Fiona casually dropped her shopping bags at a corner of the room with a cold expression on her face. She walked toward Jack and said angrily. "I'm warning you: If you don't have the money, it's best if you don't try to act like one. You're our son-in-law, the son-in-law who married into the Taylor family. If you lose face, the entire family will suffer the same fate. Do you understand me?!"

Selena frowned at that moment. "Mother, what's going on? Why are you still in such a bad mood when you've already bought so many things? Did someone step on your tail?" Selena asked calmly when she saw what was going on.

Fiona's frosty expression, coupled with an equally wintry glare, maintained as she glared daggers at Jack. "Have you booked the hotel?" she repeated.

Jack smiled bitterly. "Mother, don't you worry about it. I've already booked the hotel, and you'll understand what's happening in a few more days. I'll surely keep my promise of surprising Selena!"

Fiona still looked at Jack angrily. "Alright, if you've already booked the hotel, tell me which hotel did you book? How many stars does that hotel have?"

Embarrassed, Jack offered a bitter smile as he replied, "Mother, I've already told you that it's a surprise. It doesn't seem to be a good idea to talk about it now, right?"

"It's not a good idea, you say?" came Fiona's anger-laced reply followed by a bitter chuckle. "You must be embarrassed to speak about it because you booked a cheap and lowly hotel!"

"Mother, I don't really care about these. We don't have much money now, and although Jack got three hundred million from the Watson family, we still need to be frugal with our expenses and not be too extravagant. Apart from that, Jack and I don't have a job yet." Selena smiled calmly and helped persuade Fiona.

Fiona turned to look at Selena upon hearing her reply. "Do you know how Cecilia and Kelly looked down at us when I met them on the streets today? They booked the top floor of a six-star hotel. What's more, the venue's rent is already one hundred eighty-eight million, eight hundred and eighty thousand!"

"Oh, I know that place. The hotel is located opposite the seven-star hotel and they're both right next to each other, right?" Jack could not stamp down his smirk when he heard this. It would definitely be much more shameful for the other party since they chose this particular location. Both venues were right next to each other, and anyone could see the ongoings of the other hotel from the respective venues. By then, Cecilia would definitely regret the choices she made.

"Great! You know that place too!" Fiona was extremely angry. "Don't do advertisements and say that it'll be a city-stirring event if you can't make it happen! I don't want to be in such a shameful situation like you!"

"Mother, don't you worry. I promise you that we won't lose face. By then, you'll be the most glamorous mother-in-law in the entire world!" Jack smiled confidently.

Chapter 820

"Hmph! I don't believe in a word you say. I'm warning you: I might attend Cecilia's wedding if you fail to satisfy me by then. After all, if nobody from our side is attending their wedding, it means that we're not respecting giving them and the Gold family enough. Do you understand me?" Fiona made a sound of

indignation with mouth closed, still not believing in Jack.

“Mother, aren’t you afraid that Cecilia will mock you if you attend their wedding? I’m sure you know her personality well. She’s always looking for chances to look down at our family!” Selena’s face darkened when she heard this and added, “Apart from that, I don’t think that anybody from their family is joining my birthday party. Why should we attend their wedding if they’re not coming to my birthday? Wouldn’t we be asking for it if we do that?”

“Well...” Fiona frowned when she heard what Selena said; she had a point. Based on Cecilia’s behavior, Fiona would definitely be mocked if she attended their wedding.

Fiona paused before she glared at Jack. “It’s all your fault!”

She then picked up what she bought and strode back to her room.

“Honey, ignore what my mother just said. She’s always been a vain person, and she loves to have a sense of proprietary.” Selena smiled apologetically at Jack after Fiona left.

“It’s alright!” Jack laughed before he resumed enjoying his cup of coffee.

...

Meanwhile, Hector Zaborowski went to the Eagle Clan with a group of bodyguards.

“What a surprise, Master Zaborowski! What is such an honorable man like you doing here at Eagle Clan?” Lee Neuman smiled indifferently as he looked at Hector.

“Master Neuman, can’t I pay you a casual visit in my free time?” Hector smiled hypocritically, and his smile seemed so calm.

Lee inwardly smirked. Although he did not know what happened to Green Sky Hall last night, he knew that Hector was here to work with the Eagle Clan to get rid of Jack.

After all, Lee knew his subordinates killed three people from Hector's Green Sky Hall two days ago and framed it on Jack. Hector, on the other hand, could not bear the thought of his men being killed.

"I believe that Master Saborowski is here today with an agenda!" Smiling, Lee picked up his cup and calmly drank some tea.

He knew very well Hector was the one who should be panicked, not him.No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 821-825

Chapter 821

Hector gave a sheepish smile as he continued, "By the way, didn't Master Neuman say that you wanted my help to kill Jack? I informed you back then that the Wilson family harbor quite the hatred for him, too. I wonder, have you contacted the Wilson family? Is there any progress on that?"

Lee knew all too well about Hector's intention just by listening to him. Hector was still refusing to cooperate with them; he wanted them to do the dirty work for him so he would not need to do anything. The Eagle Clan and Wilson family could work together and helped Hector get rid of Jack.

Lee grinned at him as he replied, "I've contacted the Wilson family, and it's true that they want to kill Jack badly. After quite the discussion, however, we came to the same thought that Jack is a really strong master. His fighting ability is comparable to Kings of War that even if both parties worked together, we might not topple him. Apart from that, he's killed three hundred of our people before." Lee purposely sighed aloud before he continued, "We can't think of anything else. We're not confident that we can win, not even if both families work together to fight him, and that's why we can only put this on hold till this day."

The corners of Hector slightly twitched. He thought about it and said, "How about this: Do you think that

we'd stand a chance if the three of us work together?"

Lee was inwardly happy upon noticing Hector's offer, but he acted calm and replied, "Are you serious this time? You're not joking, right?"

Hector sighed helplessly and said, "Of course I mean what I say, as we've suffered a huge loss after all. We were supposed to trade with the Watson family yesterday, and I estimate that there were around 500 to 600 people from both sides. In order to be safe, I even borrowed two to three masters from my boss, and I don't know how to break the news to my boss!"

"What happened? Did something serious happen? Did something happen to everybody from your side and the masters from Kingston Hall?" Lee took a deep breath when he heard this news. He was obviously frightened by this news.

Hector nodded. "None of our people and the Watson family's people returned. I sent someone to check it out and discovered that the abandoned factory we used as our trading ground was burned to the ground. The opponent burnt the factory after he killed our people, and I think he's destroyed all traces of his crime."

"Oh my god! Are you suspecting that Jack is the perpetrator? If that's the case, isn't his fighting ability too scary? Is he a seven or eight-star King of War?" Lee was shocked. He thought that Hector wanted to get rid of Jack because of the death of three people from Green Sky Hall, but he never thought that Green Sky Hall could suffer such a big loss. As it turned out, they were not as powerful as they claimed to be.

Somehow, Kingston Hall was dragged into the mess as they lost several masters.

Everybody knew that Kingston Hall's master was someone with a bad temper, and he would definitely avenge his brothers when he knew about what happened!

While it did not show on his face, Hector was internally fretting. "If that's the case, it'd be really difficult

for us to kill him. It wouldn't work even if the three of us work together, so I plan to go to my boss and get Kingston Hall to lend us a helping hand. The four of us should work together and get rid of Jack!"

"Alright, it's best if Kingston Hall willingly joins us. Jack won't be able to survive our attack this time!" Lee stood up in excitement and said, "Why don't we ask the Wilson family to come over, and we'll go visit your boss together to discuss how we can eliminate Jack."

Hector nodded. "We'll need a huge amount of people and many masters if we're to kill Jack. Not only that, but we'll have to make sure that he's alone when we carry out the attack. I think that guy has people helping him out, and that's why we lost so many men this time. After all, he had been in the army for five years and must know many soldiers. A person who can survive five years on the battlefield can't be assumed to be a regular person!"

"Of course. As long as Green Sky Hall and Kingston Hall agree to the plans, it wouldn't be difficult to kill Jack!" Lee was extremely confident.

Lee was initially wary of Hector, hesitant if he was genuine in helping them out, but it seemed as though Jack had dug his own grave. Not only did Jack disrupt Hector's business, but he even killed so many of their people, and this forced Hector to make the decision to join them.

Chapter 822

Not long after, Hector Zaborowski, Lee Neuman, and David Wilson went to Kingston Hall with their subordinates.

The leaders of four powerful families and clans gathered at the same place to discuss how to punish the son-in-law who married into the Taylor family.

...

Meanwhile, tear-filled Timothy Drake laid on his bed alone.

“Jack, you bastard!” cursed Timothy by reflex, fists balled tightly as he did. “I, Timothy Drake, swear that I’ll kill you!”

He never thought that he would see the day when his private parts would get cut off entirely. He never once thought he would be a real-life eunuch.

On the other hand, his father publicly announced that he suffered a minor injury, and Timothy nearly passed out in white-hot anger.

He could not understand why his father was so afraid of Jack. He did not believe that they could not get rid of Jack with the entire Drake family’s power.

His surprise only grew when James not only handed the South City Group to Tanya but also several other companies, all while he suffered immense pain. This arrangement meant that he had nothing much to do. He could only manage several small cafes and internet cafes in the Drake family businesses.

Timothy despised the fate that befell him. Instead of blaming his recklessness and impulsive behavior under alcohol influence, he blamed it on his father for not avenging him.

With those thoughts in mind, he quickly called Leo Turner and asked him to visit him with several of their brothers.

“Just you wait, Jack. Since my father won’t avenge me, I’ll do it myself,” hissed Timothy as he clenched his fists. “I’m not a person you can push around... I won’t accept this!”

...

Fiona’s displeasure with Jack continued to fester even during dinner. She felt anger overwhelming her

when she recalled how Cecilia and Kelly basically made fun of her in the afternoon.

As they ate, Fiona began, “By the way, I suddenly remembered something. Didn’t I tell you guys before how I mistook the pricing of a particular necklace with a lone ruby? I didn’t notice there was an extra zero behind it, and that nine billion dollar necklace has been brought by a mysterious buyer!”

“How’s that possible? Are there really people who’d buy a nine billion dollar necklace? That person must be really rich!” blurted Ben upon hearing his mother’s explanation.

“I wonder which pretty woman is lucky enough to be able to wear such a nice necklace!” Elaine, who sat beside Ben, was rather envious of the fact.

Fiona and Andrew were satisfied that Elaine became Ben’s girlfriend. After all, Elaine was not only pretty, but she also had a nice figure, a sweet mouth, and a pair of lively eyes. It also helped that she was rather rich and was skilled in martial arts.

In Fiona’s opinion, she felt that Elaine was ten times better—or even more—than Xena.

“The shop previously stated that the necklace is used to increase publicity or for exhibition purposes, so it can be considered as the shop’s symbolism. The pricing of this necklace is definitely more than nine billion dollar as it still has lots of hidden value. They wouldn’t have sold it for nine billion dollar under normal circumstances!” Nobody expected that Selena would have quite the knowledge about these things. “My guess is that the shop must’ve not sold the necklace if it isn’t at least with a twenty billion price tag. I suspect that this mysterious person must be very powerful and had bought the necklace at a very high price!”

“I never thought that my darling would know so much about such things!”

Chapter 823

Jack praised Selena after hearing her theory on the ruby necklace. He looked forward to seeing Selena’s surprise when she would put on this necklace in a few days’ time.

“It’s not hard to know of such things. They’ve used this necklace to publicize their shop for a very long time. They also exhibited this necklace in other cities, so I believe that there were many people who wanted to buy this necklace. All that traffic, yet they never sold the necklace!” Selena drank her wine as she continued, “Apart from that, they spent quite a lot of money on their advertisements, and these are their costs. There’s no way they would’ve sold it for just nine billion.”

“Sigh! What a shame. The son-in-law who married into our family is a useless person. Had he been a capable person, my daughter might be able to wear such a nice necklace!” Fiona sighed and glanced at Jack.

“Mother, what are you talking about? Jack is a very capable person. Such an extravagant necklace is too expensive, and it has nothing to do with Jack’s capability!” Ben immediately spoke on Jack’s behalf. “Apart from that, I don’t think that your son, me, can buy such a necklace even if I work for the rest of my life!”

Fiona was shocked at this. Ben used to side with her and supported what she said, but he had changed sides and was siding with Jack.

Andrew, most of the time, also sided with Jack, and Fiona felt that the two were rather disappointing as they were so easily bribed by Jack.

“I don’t care. I only know that Jack promised that the birthday dinner will be a city-stirring one, and I won’t be satisfied if the party doesn’t meet my expectations. Hmph!” scoffed Fiona before she resumed her dinner.

...

Early the next morning, Jack still looked relaxed and did not seem to do anything for the birthday party. It made no sense to Fiona and Andrew. Jack told them that he was giving their daughter a city-stirring birthday party, but they did not see Jack doing anything or even booking a hotel.

Since he had employed a dozen bodyguards, Jack no longer asked Dennis Howard to continue protecting their family. Still, Jack did tell Dennis to be on alert at all times, that he would inform him should any matter arise.

Jenny was also relieved from the chore of picking up and sending Kylie. She was in charge of arranging the workers' tasks and paying their salaries.

Nonetheless, Jack did not expect that Kylie and the bodyguards appointed to pick her up would not return even as it was late in the evening.

At that moment, an unknown number rang Jack's cellphone.

"Jack, are you the one who killed my brothers from Green Sky Hall?" Hector's voice could be heard from the other side of the line.

Jack laughed coldly and replied, "I've warned you before yet you refused to listen to me, so I taught you a lesson. Why?"

"So it was you. I never thought you'd admit to it, and that fast too!" Hector laughed and said, "If that's the case, come alone and meet us. Your daughter and your two bodyguards are at our mercy. We're at the white tower on the top of the hill at the city outskirts. Remember: come alone. If we catch wind that you're bringing people with you, we'll kill your daughter in that instant!"

The corners of Jack's mouth slightly twitched, but he soon calmed himself down. "It's Blaze Mountain, right?"

"Yes. Remember what I said and come alone. Our goal is to kill you, so we won't kill your daughter if you come alone. Of course, your daughter will die if we discover that you're coming over with somebody else!" With that, Hector hung up the phone.

Chapter 824

Blaze Mountain was not far away from the city entrance, and there was an old white tower on top of the mountain. However, the tower had been abandoned for hundreds of years, and nobody even ventured into the mountain.

Jack placed his phone away and clenched his fists tightly. "You're the ones who forced me into this. Hmph! So I'm not allowed to bring anybody? Do they think that they can kill me if I go alone?"

With that, Jack drove out of the city and headed for Blaze Mountain.

Hector stood on the top of the mountain and had a telescope with him. With it, he spotted Jack driving toward the destination and, upon reaching the foot of the mountain, parked his car.

"He's here. This guy actually came alone!" Hector laughed. "Since he came alone, he's as good as dead!"

"That's for sure! We've prepared a thousand people for him this time! There's a total of a thousand and two hundred people here, and all of them are elites from different clans. The higher he goes, the stronger our people stationed there are!" said the excited Lee. "We can easily kill him with our human-wave tactic!"

Their words were met with one of Jack's bodyguards' burst of laughter. "You guys truly do look down on our master!" She was tied to one of the white tower's huge stone pillars with Orchid Yames and Kylie. While Kylie sustained no injuries, both she and Orchid were badly hurt. Orchid suffered the most as she had several cuts on her arms and her blood tainted her clothes red.

"We know that he's good, so we prepared a lot of people for him. This is a continuous battle, mind you, so we plan to tire him out!" Hector laughed. "This guy killed so many of our Green Sky Hall's masters, thus today's the day he meets his end!"

Hector smirked as he continued to speak, "After we kill Jack, we'll slowly torture his wife and this young lady here. We'll be sure to treat his family with special care!"

Kingston Hall's master, Tobias Zaborowski walked toward both pretty bodyguards and caressed their faces with a cold smile on his face. "Aren't the two of you quite strong too? Seems like you've been bested by our masters!"

"Hmph! How dare you even gloat about it? You've ordered a dozen masters to attack us, and many of your people died. If we weren't caught up trying to protect Kylie, do you really think that you'd be able to catch us?" Orchid made an indignant sound with her mouth closed, unbothered by the man's bold claims. "Regardless, your luck's run out today. How dare you kidnap our master's daughter? That's like asking for a death wish!"

Both bodyguards knew how scary the Supreme Warrior was. Nobody had seen his true power, and he would not use much strength even if there were a thousand opponents.

This was the reason they worshipped him. While there were several masters from Kingston Hall who were very strong and had the fighting ability on par with Kings of War, they would not be able to kill Jack.

"You can be stubborn all you want! I think that the highest he can go is the middle of this mountain!" The confident Tobias crossed his arms at his chest. "Kingston Hall has their Four Great Warriors, and one of them is waiting for him at the pavilion halfway up the mountain. Surely Jack would be tired after all the killing, and by the time he reaches that place, our people will be waiting for him there. This is a tactic of war, do you understand?"

Orchid ignored him as she placed full faith in Jack's fighting ability.

Although Jack's adversaries were people of large numbers, there were not many true masters. Apart from that, most of them stayed at home most of the time and enjoyed a comfortable life. They did not have much actual fighting experience, and that reduced their fighting ability.

Compared to them, Jack had fought several years with masters of other countries that were no weaklings. Several years ago, the enemy country was extremely strong and Daxia was defeated again and again. The country could only send soldiers to the frontline without stopping.

At that period, the soldiers who served at the frontlines merely went through less than half a month of training before they were sent to the frontlines for a life-and-death war with the enemy.

Hence, during the one or two years when Jack and the others were sent to the frontlines, the soldiers who just joined the war could be described as expendables.

Under such circumstances, only a handful of people managed to survive the war.

Chapter 825

Despite the pressure, Jack managed to rise to the challenge and grew extremely strong. His fighting ability improved significantly along the line as he donned a dragon-shaped mask and had a black sword in his hands.

One after another master appeared after he emerged, and those masters became the current Nine Great Gods of War.

As for Jack, his fighting ability surpassed the Gods of War, so much so that although he was outnumbered, it was no difficult task for Jack to deal with them.

Jack had just reached the foot of the mountain when several bodyguards of the Wilson family rushed toward him. "He's here! Kill him!"

"So, men from the Wilson family are also here?" Jack instantly smirked as he spotted a few familiar faces. He had just arrived at the foot of the mountain when so many people rushed toward him. He knew at that moment that he would meet many more as he scaled up the mountain.

The sky gradually darkened; the night was destined to be a bloody one.

With the cold grin still on his face, Jack flicked his wrists to reveal several dozen silver needles. With a wave of his hands, the needles flew out like afterimages.

Many people were killed before they even reached Jack.

“This guy knows how to use hidden weapons, and it’s hard to notice them! Be careful!” somebody exclaimed when they saw several dozen people dying just as Jack so much so moved.

“Die!” Standing on higher ground, another burly man jumped up and lunged at Jack with a big, heavy knife.

“Hmph!” came Jack’s small sound of indignation. He moved his hand behind his back, and nobody noticed that he had a dragon-shaped ring on his hand. The ring began to morph as a black sword appeared in Jack’s hand.

The black sword was like a long ruler, black like charcoal. The handle was shaped like a dragon, and there was a black dragon accented on the hilt.

“How did he take that out?” The burly man was one of the Wilson family’s masters, a member of their three protectors with the strength comparable to a major’s.

The man was stunned to see a sword in Jack’s hand, but he could only grit his teeth as he resumed his attack.

He believed that since he was attacking from higher ground, the weight of his heavy knife and his dive would increase his fighting ability. Jack was on lower ground, and there was no way for Jack to block his powerful force.

Jack held his sword horizontally, standing where he stood, unmoving.

Clank!

Following the clattering sound of metal, everybody was stunned by what happened next. The heavy knife in the burly man's hands was cut open like it was tofu; the incision was hauntingly tidy.

"How's that possible?!" blurted the burly man. Jack took advantage of the situation and pulled his sword back, only to cut open the man's head. There was a daunting fountain of blood from the dead man's body, and the man rolled down the hill. No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 826-830

Chapter 826

"How's this possible? He's dead!" The faces of those who were attacking Jack turned pale when they saw the burly man's body rolled down the mountain with his severed head. Jack's fighting ability was incredibly powerful, and that sword of his cut through steel like it was mud.

Jack did not even falter after he killed the burly man. He rushed toward the mountain top, jump after jump.

"Attack!"

Apart from the Wilson family's men, those from Green Sky Hall also made their appearance. The weaker people from Kingston Hall and Eagle Clan also appeared at the bottom of the mountain as they tried to surround Jack there.

Jack's only fear was that Hector and the others would go against their words. If he was late, they might kill Kylie and the other two bodyguards.

Because of that, Jack chose to ignore the extras and continued to rush up the mountain. He swung the sword in his hand as he slashed and cut down the people that tried to surround him.

Blood spurted all over the place. With a leap, Jack moved several meters forward and killed those who blocked him with just a few swings of his sword before rushing to another place with another jump.

There was no hesitation with the way he moved and killed. The sword moved with his arm gestures, and every move was an uninterrupted attack.

“Boss, do you think that this guy will get to where we are?” In a pavilion halfway up the mountain, a middle-aged woman questioned the middle-aged man in front of her as they heard sounds of clashes that came from below the mountain.

“I believe he would. Otherwise, I’d be disappointed in his fighting capability. It wouldn’t be a problem for him to reach this place if he has the fighting abilities comparable to Kings of War. Still, he might be badly hurt!” The man smiled indifferently and continued, “It doesn’t matter if this person offended another powerful clan. Isn’t he on a suicide mission now that he’s offended our Kingston Hall? Kingston Hall is the biggest clan in Eastfield and is even more powerful than Eagle Clan!”

This middle-aged man was none other than one of Kingston Hall’s Four Great Warriors. He was a tyrannical killer and was exceptionally good at using concealed weapons. Any regular people would have died before they could even get near to him.

“There are over seven hundred people at the bottom, and it’ll be very difficult for him to even get here. I don’t think he’ll reach this place under twenty minutes!” The middle-aged woman smiled. She was also a strong fighter herself and was one of the Wilson family’s masters.

Michael Wilson was also in the pavilion, and as he sat on the other end, he languidly commented. “I’m here to see the guy dying today. He’s no match for you both, especially when he’s all worn out and injured!”

Just as Michael finished, however, they spotted a figure that leaped toward them and was just several meters away within a few jumps.

“Jack!” Michael’s eyes widened when it registered to him that it was Jack, and he wondered if his eyes tricked him.

They held the belief that Jack would need at least 20 to 40 minutes to reach where they were.

They never expected that Jack would come rather close to them in just five minutes.

It was a difficult feat for a regular person to run up to the pavilion in five minutes, even without obstructions.

It was only then when they spotted the many people that chased after Jack, though most of them were extremely tired from trying to catch up with him.

Jack was light on his feet as he nimbly and swiftly moved; he bulldozed his way forward and went past everyone else.

“F*ck! How did he manage to come so quickly?!” Both the middle-aged man and woman were just as surprised. Jack’s speed exceeded their expectation.

As Jack killed two other people that stood in his way with just two moves, Jack rushed forward and reached the pavilion.

“Michael? It’s been a long time!” Jack smiled coldly and glanced at Michael.

The middle-aged woman rushed toward Jack with a dagger at hand. “Young man, today is the day you die—”

Jack, without breaking a sweat, dodged her attack. With a flick of his wrist, he slit her throat with his knife and killed her in one move.

Chapter 827

Without a second wasted, the middle-aged man threw his concealed weapons at Jack.

Jack instantly grabbed Michael and used him as a human shield.

“You—” Before Michael could register what happened, the thrown concealed weapons had stabbed him.

“Young Master Michael!” The middle-aged man reeled back in shock. Jack’s actions were too fast and he could barely catch up with him. All he saw a vague shadow, a mere silhouette, and Jack had already switched places.

Jack tossed Michael’s body forward and slammed it against the middle-aged man.

The middle-aged man was knocked two steps backward, and just as he was caught up trying to push Michael’s rotund body away from him, Jack had already placed his sword on his neck.

The middle-aged man looked at Jack in surprise. He finally realized how scary the man before him was.

Both him and the middle-aged woman were considered masters in Eastfield. fearless even if they met two or even three-starred Kings of War. There was a possibility that they might even be able to kill these Kings of War.

Nonetheless, they were helpless when they met Jack.

Jack flicked his sword. Blood splattered, and the middle-aged man fell. Jack merely pressed on as he scaled up the mountain.

“How’s this possible?!” There were bodies all over the place, but many could not catch up to Jack.

They knew how strong the middle-aged man and woman were, thus it surprised everyone that they were eliminated all too quickly.

The remaining people stopped when they reached the pavilion, and they began to question their mission.

“Should we continue pursuing him? He’s too f*cking strong. I don’t even think the people up there could stop him!” one of them said after a long period of silence.

“Let’s stop here. The clan masters will surely blame us if that guy dies!” another person said in fright.

“But if the clan masters can’t even hold up against his attacks, we’d be corpses ourselves if we go up! That guy must’ve killed half of the people here as he went up!” One of the elders thought about it and, with gritted teeth, spoke, “If that’s the case, we’d be on a suicide mission if we go up now. Why don’t we rest for a few minutes before we go up?”

The others kept quiet, but nobody continued to go up the mountain. They could not even catch up with Jack the entire time and were frightened by the road littered with corpses. The scene was too much of a nightmare, even for people who were constantly in fights like them.

...

After killing a few more men, Jack reached White Tower.

“How can this be?!” a man who stood in front of White Tower exclaimed when he saw a man covered in blood rushing toward them. This person was the son-in-law who married into the Taylor family.

Jack was coated in blood, and they could not assess if it was his own and if he was injured.

Jack’s speed only grew when he saw Kylie and the others tied to stone pillars. He stepped forward, and only his shadow was left behind.

“No, stop him!” David yelled out in fright. This young man had such extreme explosive force. Was it possible that he suffered no injuries at all?

Chapter 828

David Wilson and the others were stunned when they saw the blood-coated Jack, his clothes dyed a crimson color.

They felt that Jack must have been exhausted, with the thought that his body would be filled with scars and the man to be at the brink of death.

They never thought Jack could move so quickly. His speed was faster than the masters at their side.

Much to their chagrin, Jack was already next to Orchid and the others. He severed the ropes that bound Orchid and the others up when they finally reacted.

“Wuu... Daddy!” Kylie was terrified from the start, but she dared not cry. She only started crying when she saw her father—Jack—rushing toward them all covered in blood. It was unknown if she was afraid or worried for Jack.

“Kylie, don’t be afraid!” Jack flicked his sword and slew those who dared run up to them. “Orchid, take Kylie and keep her safe!”

With that, Jack ran toward Hector.

“Kill him! Kill all of them! This guy has to be dying at this point, all out of energy to spend! Remember that you’re all masters!” Hector yelled loudly when he saw Jack rushing over to him.

“Attack!” The fighters roared and rushed toward Jack and his company.

“Today is the day you kiss your life goodbye!” With a laugh, Jack tightened his grip on the sword and rushed forward once again.

This time, Jack’s speed increased. He slew the masters who rushed in front of the others with just a few slashes, and he ended Hector’s life with one slash.

The remaining three out of the Four Great Warriors attacked Jack simultaneously, but they only managed to hold up for several seconds before they fell to the floor and breathed their last.

“Im... Impossible!” Kingston Hall’s master shrieked in disbelief, his face pale due to the fear.

The people around them were so frightened and dared not move. Jack’s combat abilities stunned them speechless.

“Who...who are you? How’s this possible? We have so many people with us, so many masters! How are they not your match?” Lee Neuman’s legs turned to jelly when he gazed at the sprawled bodies on the floor. The people they had summoned were elites, yet Jack managed to kill half of them while none of their masters managed to even graze Jack’s skin.

“B—Boss, please let us go! We didn’t have any other choice!” One of the masters was so frightened that he knelt on the floor and begged Jack for mercy.

Covered in blood, Jack’s eyes seemingly had fire in them. He looked daunting as he stood with his sharp sword.

“I can let you guys go, but there’s one condition: Kill all your clan masters and go back to dismiss your clans. As for the properties, divide among yourself and get out of Eastfield. Can you all do that?” ordered Jack, his instructions laced with coldness and apathy. As he had killed numerous people on his way up the mountain, the anger in his heart was soothed though only by a little.

He decided to let go of the remaining men. Otherwise, there would have been too much bloodshed and deaths.

“Thank you for not killing us, Big Brother!” Although the remaining people were skilled fighters, Jack’s very existence scared them witless. They had never once seen such a ruthless person.

“You... You *ssholes! Traitors! Would you have what you have today if I hadn’t provided for you all?!” Tobias’ voice trembled in anger.

“We’re sorry, Master!” One of the men stood behind Tobias and stabbed him from behind, and others followed suit as they surrounded him and killed him.

Chapter 829

“Ahh!” Lee yelled in fright and tried to escape when he saw how grave the situation was for him.

Sadly, several people from Eagle Clan surrounded him, and he was killed right after.

Several strong masters and bosses were killed on the spot.

“Remember to take care of the bodies. After all, they were once your brothers,” commented Jack before he, along with Orchid and the rest, descended the mountain.

The remaining people automatically stood aside to provide a path for Jack when they saw him walking over. They looked on as he left.

Many of them wiped the cold sweat on their foreheads after Jack and his company left.

It was only after they reached the foot of the mountain that Jack turned and looked at Kylie, who stopped crying, with gentle eyes. “Don’t be scared, Kylie. These clans are gone forever! Did they frighten you?”

“Mm... Daddy is the best...! Kylie will stop crying...” Kylie pursed her lips and had a wronged expression on her face.

Kylie gazed at her father, worry evident in her eyes as she asked, “Daddy, are you hurt?”

“Don’t worry, my dear. Daddy is fine. The blood on me is from the fools!” Jack took some clothes out from his car after he spoke. “Wait for me here as I do some preparation. I’ll go wash myself and these clothes at the river over there. It’d be too scary for others to see me in this state!”

“Yes, Master!” Orchid and the other bodyguard nodded, and they brought Kylie into Jack’s car.

Jack went to the river not far away to take a bath and change. As the river was not too far from where they were, he got to the river after he walked past some trees.

As the pretty bodyguard glanced toward the woods, she murmured lowly, “Sister Orchid, don’t you want to go and have a look?”

Orchid rolled her eyes and used her pointer finger to poke the other bodyguard's forehead. "What are you thinking? You're still young, so stop thinking nonsense. Let me tell you this: Our Master's fighting capabilities displayed today are just mere warmup for him. His true abilities are more than just that, and it's too scary to even think about it!" Orchid paused before she added, "If you go there now, I'm sure you'll be discovered in mere seconds!"

The pretty bodyguard clasped her hand over her mouth and giggled into it when she heard what Orchid said. "I thought that Sister Orchid wouldn't have thoughts about it, but it turns out that you're worried about the shame if Master discovers you! It seems that although you're married, you still think about our master!"

Orchid stared at her. "Nonsense! Isn't this very normal? Any woman would want to take a look. After all, this isn't some random guy, it's the Supreme Warrior!"

Jack eventually returned after he bathed and changed; he looked handsome and fresh.

"Alright, let's go! It's time to go home!" Jack smiled, and they then drove back home.

...

Selena waited anxiously in the yard at their home. The sun had set, but Kylie and the two bodyguards in-charge of fetching her had not returned. Understandably, Selena was worried that something had happened to them.

Apart from that, Jack was also nowhere to be seen. She phoned him, but he did not even pick up.

Her nerves only settled down when she saw the familiar car; Jack had returned. "Where did you guys go? Why are you only back at this hour?"

“It’s nothing. Somebody kidnapped Kylie, but I’ve eliminated them!” Jack smiled indifferently and said to Selena, “Don’t tell Father and Mother about this so that they wouldn’t worry about it. The bad guys are dead!”

“Okay.” Selena nodded, though the frown did not leave her face. Her thoughts that plagued her only fueled her anxiety. Orchid and the other bodyguard were extremely good fighters, but the other party still managed to get a hold of Kylie. This meant that the opponents’ fighting ability was also quite strong.

Chapter 830

Selena thought nothing odd of the kidnapping; so long as Kylie and everybody else returned safely. She did not say anything much so that her parents would not worry.

After all, Selena knew that Fiona would not only be worried but would also bark at Jack to no end. Fiona might blame it on Jack; she would have said that he made too many enemies and caused something like that to happen.

Jack took a small bottle of medication and gave it to Orchid and the other bodyguard. He then told both bodyguards to take a rest before he picked up Kylie and walked back to the villa.

That night, an uproar filled the entire Eastfield.

News that the Wilson family, Green Sky Hall, Kingston Hall, and Eagle Clan dismantled overnight spread like wildfire.

Rumor had it that they crossed a very important person, and the masters of these clans were killed as a result.

The rumor continued that the remaining people sold out and left Eastfield that night as if they were afraid they would also be killed.

The other clans were extremely frightened when they heard it. After all, Green Sky Hall and Eagle Clan were no small clans that people would purposely seek trouble with. Kingston Hall, on the other hand, was one of the biggest amongst all clans, and their Four Great Warriors were extremely strong.

Nobody expected that a clan like that would disappear overnight.

The second day, at the Drake family mansion, James and Tanya were just as shocked when they heard the news.

“Do you know who did it?” James asked as he looked at Spectre, who was beside them.

Spectre shook his head. “Not many people from these clans were left, but all of them were so frightened that they left Eastfield last night.” Spectre paused for a moment before he went on, “However, I discovered many bodies in a valley not far away from Blaze Mountain, and the bodies of Lee Neuman and the rest were also there. I inspected their wounds and discovered from the attacks that it was done by the same person. It’s daunting that one person can kill so many strong masters!”

James nodded after he heard this. “I suspect that Jack was the one who did it!”

Spectre also nodded. “Master, I also suspect that it was Jack as these clans had crossed Jack recently. Apart from that, I heard that Jack’s daughter, Kylie was abducted at the school entrance right after school period. Two of their bodyguards were no match for the abductors, so they were taken away as well.”

“This guy is too fearsome. I wonder if he’s hurt after killing so many people to save his daughter!” James was overwhelmed. “He’s astoundingly unkillable for coming back alive after killing so many people alone. I think that even if he’s not a God of War, his fighting ability is almost the same as one!”

Spectre was also in awe. “To be honest, this is the first time I’ve seen such a strong person. Lucky for us, we’ve never fought with or pissed Jack off before. We would’ve been done for if we did!”

James nodded in agreement. "I'll tell Timothy about this later. I'm afraid that this guy would cause more trouble if we don't."

"That's right. It's quite a big blow for our eldest young master. He's been at home all this while, and he doesn't even talk!" No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 831-835

Chapter 831

Spectre nodded as he spoke.

After a while, James went to visit Timothy.

Timothy glanced at James before he shifted his gaze and ignored James.

"I'm here today to tell you something," began James as he kept his gaze on Timothy. "It's best if you cease all thoughts of getting back at Jack. Kingston Clan, Green Sky Hall, the Wilson family, and Eagle Clan were all overthrown in just one night. All their masters and leaders are dead. Those that remain aren't skillful enough, so they ran away from Eastfield last night!"

"What?!" Timothy was shocked. "You're saying that both large clans, Kingston Hall and Eagle Clan, together with the Wilson family and Green Sky Hall, have been destroyed?!"

James nodded. "We investigated the matter and discovered that Jack was behind their ultimate downfall. These four powers worked together to kidnap Jack's daughter. Jack went to Blaze Mountain alone, and the path he walked was littered with corpses. This caused all four powers to disappear from Eastfield!"

"He went alone? Impossible... That's impossible! How can he be so powerful? He's no God of War!" Timothy shook his head vehemently. All he thought of for the past two days was how he could get back at Jack and end him, once and for all.

If what his father said was true, did that not mean that he would never get his revenge?

“Even if he’s no God of War, his fighting ability can rival theirs. Such a person is really too scary!” James smiled bitterly and advised, “Timothy, I know that you hate him very much, but you can’t do anything about it. I’ve urged you many times to befriend Jack and not offend him, yet my words fell on deaf ears. Shouldn’t you reflect the reason why you’re in this situation now?”

As he noted Timothy remained silent, James continued, “Do you think that I’d purposely give up getting justice for you? I’m not afraid, but I had to weigh everything in life. If we really went on a quest for vengeance, the entire Drake family would be involved. By then, we won’t be able to avenge you. That’s not getting revenge; that’s going on a suicide mission! Apart from that, why did you try to take advantage of Selena? You would’ve been dead had you been someone else. Jack has been benevolent enough to keep you alive!”

“I get it, Father!” Timothy eventually conceded and nodded. “Jack is really too strong. Who knew that he’d hide his true powers so well? Now, he’s destroyed three clans at one go, and two of those clans are really big ones. The hidden powers in Eastfield would act much more cautiously in the future!”

James nodded. “That’s right. We dared not offend Kingston Hall and Eagle Clan before because they had the upper hand, a higher edge than us, but things have now changed. With both clans gone, the other clans can’t even compare to first-class aristocratic families. We’ve no need to fear anything else in the future. We’ll be fine as long as we don’t offend powerful people like Jack or the Gods of War.”

“It’s quite late at night... Rest early.” James sighed inwardly when he saw Timothy withering in front of him and walked downstairs.

He knew his son could not resign to this ending, but what else could they have done? Jack’s power was so much more than they initially thought.

“It’s horrifying... It’s too horrifying. All four powers have been destroyed overnight!” The George family’s master was just as shocked.

He looked at Sharon—who sat before him—and said, “Sharon, do you know the results of our investigation? The destruction of these four powers was done by one person! There’s a huge possibility that he did it on his own!”

“How’s that possible? One person? Are you telling me that one person did all of that?” Sharon looked at her father with widened eyes as she shared her father’s astonishment.

The George family’s master nodded. “Yes, and this person is none other than Jack!”

“How’s that possible? That’s impossible!” Sharon could not believe her ears. “While Jack is rather strong, he can’t be that powerful. The masters of Kingston Hall have the power comparable to Kings of War, what more the masters of the other powers. I think that apart from the Gods of War or eight-star King of Wars like Skyler Celestino, nobody can manage this. Even Skyler Celestino would get hurt if he’s surrounded by so many people and killed so many...”

“He’s hurt!” Sharon suddenly stood up. “Father, are you sure that the investigation showed a huge possibility that it’s Jack?”

“Yes. Somebody kidnapped his daughter that afternoon, and Jack left the city right after,” answered the George family’s master.

“That’s bad! Even if Jack is alive, he must be injured! I need to go visit him!” Sharon was extremely anxious and ran out of the villa.

“This...” The George family’s master chuckled bitterly as he saw Sharon running out. “Did this girl forget that Jack is a miracle-working doctor? He cured you, so it’s only right that he’d be alright, don’t you think?”

He sighed. “Sadly, this is unrequited love. We’d be very fortunate if my daughter can marry someone like Jack!”

...

Jack and the others were eating when an old man walked in. “Seems like I’ve come at the right time. I’m blessed with some great food!”

“King of War Celestino!” Andrew and Fiona stood up in excitement when they saw that the eight-star King of War Skyler Celestino came to their residence.

“Oh my, an honorable guest is here! Quickly, prepare utensils for the King of War Celestino!” Andrew was beyond thrilled. He was an eight-star King of War—a person who could get everything he wanted—and he came as their guest.

“I happened to pass by, so I thought I could stop by for a drink!” Skyler laughed and sat beside Jack. “How is everything? Are you still satisfied with the bodyguards I introduced you?”

Skyler knew Jack was the one who destroyed all four powers. He also believed that Jack would suffer no injuries, even if he was alone when he fought such forces.

“Satisfied. I’m very satisfied with them, especially with Elaine, who’s about to become Ben’s wife,” beamed Jack, followed with a chuckle.

Chapter 833

The corners of Skyler’s mouth twitched when Jack revealed the news. After all, Elaine was his disciple.

He slapped his thigh and irritably commented, “What the hell? Why didn’t Elaine tell me this? That’s disrespectful; I’m her master!”

“What? Elaine is your disciple?” Fiona was beyond thrilled to have heard such a pleasant fact. When Ben would marry Elaine, would they be able to raise their family status with the master-disciple relationship between Elaine and Skyler? If anything happened, Skyler could not just ignore it, no?

Unfortunately, Elaine and Ben were not present at the table and were at their internet cafe instead. It would be good if they were here. Ben could share a drink or two with Skyler and improve their relationship.

“That’s right! That girl should’ve mentioned it to me!” Skyler said happily. “Had you guys not told me about it, I probably would only find out on the day of their marriage!”

“Come, drink! Let’s have a drink!” Jack laughed, picked up the red wine bottle in front of him, and poured wine for Skyler.

“Oh my, how can you pour wine for me?” Skyler was startled since it was the Supreme Warrior in front of him. He mindlessly blurted, “I should be pouring wine for you!”

Right as he spoke that, he realized he made a fatal mistake. Jack concealed his true identity and nobody at the table—including Selena—knew that he was the Supreme Warrior.

Skyler gave an embarrassed smile as he was met with odd looks sent his way, and he sheepishly explained, “I mean, I can do this myself. Surely I can do this myself as I like to pour my own wine! You guys are being too generous. People who drink together are family, and there’s no status difference between us! You guys shouldn’t trouble yourselves, too!”

Fiona and the others finally realized what happened. What Skyler said was too shocking for them. Why did they have the feeling that Jack was much stronger than him, to the point that an eight-star King of War had to pour wine for Jack? What this old man said was too...

Jack was just as speechless about what happened. It was fine for Skyler to join them and have drinks,

but why did he have to say something like that?

Jack smiled embarrassingly and offered, "That won't work. Even if we don't consider your status as the King of War, I should consider you as my elder with your age. Shouldn't I be the one to fill your wine glass?"

Skyler immediately responded with a smile. "Oh, but of course! You're very humble, my boy! Come, let's drink together!"

"Of course! Come, let's drink!" Fiona and the others were elated. Joan, who seldom drank, also joined in the toast. After all, it was bad to not honor the eight-star King of War.

The last thing everyone expected was for Sharon to barge in at that very moment. "Is everything alright? Jack, are you okay?" Those who guarded the door knew that she was Jack's friend, so they let her and her bodyguards enter without informing the others.

Sharon instantly hurried toward Jack and ran her hands all over his body. "How are you feeling?" fretted Sharon. "Are you hurt?"

Jack was downright flustered; so many eyes were on him!

"Well, nothing happened," came Jack's immediate answer. "Miss Sharon, I don't know what you're talking about. Don't I look fine?"

Sharon instantaneously relaxed after Jack's reply. "Really? Thank goodness you're alright. I was so scared when I heard my father say that you overturned the Kingston Hall, Green Sky Hall and the other powerful clans. I thought that you'd be hurt as you killed so many people on your own!" It was only then when she looked at Selena, who was by the side, and realized that she did too much. She smiled embarrassingly and blushed.

Chapter 834

“What?!” shrieked Fiona upon hearing what Sharon had said. “How’s that possible? Miss Sharon, have you gotten some things mixed up here? The four powerful clans that had hordes of men, together with the Wilson family, were overturned by Jack?”

Jack stood, petrified and flabbergasted. If he let Sharon continue to run her mouth, his identity would be exposed for sure.

Sharon frowned and said, “There... There’s no actual evidence, so I think so...? My father told me about it!”

Jack laughed and said calmly, “I thank you for your concern, Miss Sharon, but you must’ve made a mistake here. How can I accomplish such a feat? The only person here who can do that would only be Skyler Celestino, an eight-star King of War!”

He immediately changed the subject as he spoke, “Quick, bring some utensils for Miss Sharon. Since you’re here, come eat and drink with us!”

Sharon smiled. “Oh my, King of War Celestino is also here. If that’s the case, I’d accept this with great honor!”

“That’s for sure, Miss Sharon. Don’t hesitate the next time you feel like coming over. Just treat this place like it’s yours, alright?” Fiona felt utterly pleased at that moment, though she wondered what had happened as important people like King of War Skyler Celestino and Sharon George visited them in their residence.

“Really? Then I’ll definitely come and hang out when I’m free!” Sharon laughed and secretly glanced at Jack, her face red due to shyness.

Fiona had high hopes that Jack would marry Sharon, since their family would amass quite the wealth from their marriage.

Unfortunately, Jack—that blockhead—refused to obey her, and Fiona was at a loss for words at the fact. She could not tie Jack up and force him to get married, right?

Fiona could only hope that Jack and Sharon would get closer after meeting each other more and more.

“That’s weird. If it’s not Jack, who would it be? This person is too strong!” Nobody anticipated that Sharon would whisper to herself after she sat down.

“Who cares about who that person is? It’s definitely not Jack!” Fiona remarked at that moment. “Jack is quite strong, and he won’t break a sweat if he’s to fight ten to twenty people at once, but it’s impossible for him to kill a few hundred or thousands of people. How can he be that strong? If he’s so strong, he’d be a seven or eight-star King of War, don’t you think? Wouldn’t that mean that we don’t need to worry about anything else in our lives?”

Jack purposely chimed in, “That’s right! How I wish that’s me, though. How good would it be if I’m that strong! Pitifully, I can only worship that kind of person!”

“Come now, let’s not trouble ourselves about this person. In my opinion, this person must be a heroic, stalwart character, and he might also be a master from a different city. After all, Kingston Hall, Green Sky Hall, and Eagle Clan are hidden powers, thus it’s only plausible that they must’ve offended many people and had many enemies.

“This time, they must’ve offended someone they couldn’t afford to, thus resulting in their ultimate downfall,” commented Skyler as he helped Jack smooth things over. “There are so many small and big powers in this world. It’s normal for powers to grow and for some to disappear. Normal occurrences, nothing new.”

“Yes, that’s right. Come, let’s all enjoy our drinks. We’re lucky that King of War Celestino granted us a visit and is drinking with us here at our house!” Jack raised his wine glass, and everybody started drinking again.

It was only after a few glasses did Skyler asked, "By the way, how's the preparation for Miss Selena's birthday party? There are only six days left. I'll be sure to attend to have a drink or two!"

"Everything is prepared. We welcome King of War Celestino if you can attend the party!" Jack smiled.

Chapter 835

"Oh, my! That's great!" gushed Fiona with a smile upon hearing Skyler's comment. "King of War Celestino, I'll be frank with you: Cecilia Taylor of the Taylor family is also getting married to Kelly Gold of the Gold family on that day. They've already sent out the invitations, and I'm afraid that everybody will choose to attend their wedding instead of coming to our party!"

"And how is that possible? Even if everybody else attends Kelly and Cecilia's wedding, I won't give them any face. I'll be sure to attend the birthday party Jack is hosting for Selena. After all, I like this young guy!" Skyler chuckled. What he wanted to say was that all the majors, Kings of War, and maybe even Gods of War would attend the birthday party Jack prepared for Selena.

"Me too! I'll definitely attend Sister Selena's birthday party!" Sharon declared her decision with a grin.

"Thank you very much, you two. I'm so worried that nobody would come to the party, and that'd be so embarrassing!" Andrew was grateful. "It's good that both of you will be coming, even if the others won't. After all, Miss Sharon and King of War Celestino are important people!"

"That's too generous of you to say. Too generous!" Skyler immediately said seriously. "Brother, you should drink a glass of wine as your punishment!"

"Yes, I should be punished!" Andrew immediately poured a glass of wine for himself and happily drank it down.

Meanwhile...

...

The quartet—Neil Hugo, Ivan Taylor, Ken Clark, and Xena Jackson—were in a bar as they drank.

Ken mulled over his thoughts for a moment before he began, “By the way, did you guys know about the huge news that Kingston Hall and four other powerful clans had been overthrown?!”

“Yes, it’s a really big issue. My father had just told me to keep a low-profile and not offend anybody, but I think he’s just being too careful for his own good!” Neil smiled bitterly, took the wine glass in front of him, and finished all the wine.

Ken, on the other hand, had a frown on his face. “I wonder who that person is; he’s really too strong. On another note, it’s six days to Selena’s birthday party. I wonder how Jack is doing now. The poison should be doing its job!”

“Yes, I’ve been thinking about it too. It’s unfortunate that Xena isn’t with Ben right now as can’t get any news about Jack’s situation. This guy’s got a healthy physique and is rather skilled in fighting. I wonder how he is right now after consuming the poison,” Neil responded.

Ivan thought about it, swirled the wine in the glass, and smiled in a contemplating way. “I think that his body is so weak right now that he’d fall from a light touch from others. Don’t you think so?”

Ken started laughing after he heard this. “I don’t think that far-fetched, but a normal person would’ve fallen at this point. Jack is quite strong and was a soldier for five years, but I think that his body is almost the same as a normal person’s body right now. Any bodyguard would be able to hurt him!”

“He must’ve discovered that something’s wrong by now. I wonder if both he and Selena are worried about what to do next!” Ivan smirked. “No matter. In order to be safe, I think that it’s best for us to find a chance and check the situation at their place. I want to see his progress after being poisoned!”

“That’s right. After all, his house is just opposite ours. I’ll go with you tomorrow. Let’s hold hands and go make Ben angry!” said Xena with an impish smirk.

“Honey, you’re really naughty, but I like it!” Ivan chuckled.

P.S. I apologize for delayed upload again, I fell asleep after I posted the Amazing Son-In-Law updates.
No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 831-835

Chapter 831

Spectre nodded as he spoke.

After a while, James went to visit Timothy.

Timothy glanced at James before he shifted his gaze and ignored James.

“I’m here today to tell you something,” began James as he kept his gaze on Timothy. “It’s best if you cease all thoughts of getting back at Jack. Kingston Clan, Green Sky Hall, the Wilson family, and Eagle Clan were all overthrown in just one night. All their masters and leaders are dead. Those that remain aren’t skillful enough, so they ran away from Eastfield last night!”

“What?!” Timothy was shocked. “You’re saying that both large clans, Kingston Hall and Eagle Clan, together with the Wilson family and Green Sky Hall, have been destroyed?!”

James nodded. “We investigated the matter and discovered that Jack was behind their ultimate downfall. These four powers worked together to kidnap Jack’s daughter. Jack went to Blaze Mountain alone, and the path he walked was littered with corpses. This caused all four powers to disappear from Eastfield!”

“He went alone? Impossible... That’s impossible! How can he be so powerful? He’s no God of War!” Timothy shook his head vehemently. All he thought of for the past two days was how he could get back at Jack and end him, once and for all.

If what his father said was true, did that not mean that he would never get his revenge?

“Even if he’s no God of War, his fighting ability can rival theirs. Such a person is really too scary!” James smiled bitterly and advised, “Timothy, I know that you hate him very much, but you can’t do anything about it. I’ve urged you many times to befriend Jack and not offend him, yet my words fell on deaf ears. Shouldn’t you reflect the reason why you’re in this situation now?”

As he noted Timothy remained silent, James continued, “Do you think that I’d purposely give up getting justice for you? I’m not afraid, but I had to weigh everything in life. If we really went on a quest for vengeance, the entire Drake family would be involved. By then, we won’t be able to avenge you. That’s not getting revenge; that’s going on a suicide mission! Apart from that, why did you try to take advantage of Selena? You would’ve been dead had you been someone else. Jack has been benevolent enough to keep you alive!”

“I get it, Father!” Timothy eventually conceded and nodded. “Jack is really too strong. Who knew that he’d hide his true powers so well? Now, he’s destroyed three clans at one go, and two of those clans are really big ones. The hidden powers in Eastfield would act much more cautiously in the future!”

James nodded. “That’s right. We dared not offend Kingston Hall and Eagle Clan before because they had the upper hand, a higher edge than us, but things have now changed. With both clans gone, the other clans can’t even compare to first-class aristocratic families. We’ve no need to fear anything else in the future. We’ll be fine as long as we don’t offend powerful people like Jack or the Gods of War.”

“It’s quite late at night... Rest early.” James sighed inwardly when he saw Timothy withering in front of him and walked downstairs.

He knew his son could not resign to this ending, but what else could they have done? Jack’s power was

so much more than they initially thought.

Chapter 832

“It’s horrifying... It’s too horrifying. All four powers have been destroyed overnight!” The George family’s master was just as shocked.

He looked at Sharon—who sat before him—and said, “Sharon, do you know the results of our investigation? The destruction of these four powers was done by one person! There’s a huge possibility that he did it on his own!”

“How’s that possible? One person? Are you telling me that one person did all of that?” Sharon looked at her father with widened eyes as she shared her father’s astonishment.

The George family’s master nodded. “Yes, and this person is none other than Jack!”

“How’s that possible? That’s impossible!” Sharon could not believe her ears. “While Jack is rather strong, he can’t be that powerful. The masters of Kingston Hall have the power comparable to Kings of War, what more the masters of the other powers. I think that apart from the Gods of War or eight-star King of Wars like Skyler Celestino, nobody can manage this. Even Skyler Celestino would get hurt if he’s surrounded by so many people and killed so many...”

“He’s hurt!” Sharon suddenly stood up. “Father, are you sure that the investigation showed a huge possibility that it’s Jack?”

“Yes. Somebody kidnapped his daughter that afternoon, and Jack left the city right after,” answered the George family’s master.

“That’s bad! Even if Jack is alive, he must be injured! I need to go visit him!” Sharon was extremely anxious and ran out of the villa.

“This...” The George family’s master chuckled bitterly as he saw Sharon running out. “Did this girl forget that Jack is a miracle-working doctor? He cured you, so it’s only right that he’d be alright, don’t you think?”

He sighed. “Sadly, this is unrequited love. We’d be very fortunate if my daughter can marry someone like Jack!”

...

Jack and the others were eating when an old man walked in. “Seems like I’ve come at the right time. I’m blessed with some great food!”

“King of War Celestino!” Andrew and Fiona stood up in excitement when they saw that the eight-star King of War Skyler Celestino came to their residence.

“Oh my, an honorable guest is here! Quickly, prepare utensils for the King of War Celestino!” Andrew was beyond thrilled. He was an eight-star King of War—a person who could get everything he wanted—and he came as their guest.

“I happened to pass by, so I thought I could stop by for a drink!” Skyler laughed and sat beside Jack. “How is everything? Are you still satisfied with the bodyguards I introduced you?”

Skyler knew Jack was the one who destroyed all four powers. He also believed that Jack would suffer no injuries, even if he was alone when he fought such forces.

“Satisfied. I’m very satisfied with them, especially with Elaine, who’s about to become Ben’s wife,” beamed Jack, followed with a chuckle.

The corners of Skyler's mouth twitched when Jack revealed the news. After all, Elaine was his disciple.

He slapped his thigh and irritably commented, "What the hell? Why didn't Elaine tell me this? That's disrespectful; I'm her master!"

"What? Elaine is your disciple?" Fiona was beyond thrilled to have heard such a pleasant fact. When Ben would marry Elaine, would they be able to raise their family status with the master-disciple relationship between Elaine and Skyler? If anything happened, Skyler could not just ignore it, no?

Unfortunately, Elaine and Ben were not present at the table and were at their internet cafe instead. It would be good if they were here. Ben could share a drink or two with Skyler and improve their relationship.

"That's right! That girl should've mentioned it to me!" Skyler said happily. "Had you guys not told me about it, I probably would only find out on the day of their marriage!"

"Come, drink! Let's have a drink!" Jack laughed, picked up the red wine bottle in front of him, and poured wine for Skyler.

"Oh my, how can you pour wine for me?" Skyler was startled since it was the Supreme Warrior in front of him. He mindlessly blurted, "I should be pouring wine for you!"

Right as he spoke that, he realized he made a fatal mistake. Jack concealed his true identity and nobody at the table—including Selena—knew that he was the Supreme Warrior.

Skyler gave an embarrassed smile as he was met with odd looks sent his way, and he sheepishly explained, "I mean, I can do this myself. Surely I can do this myself as I like to pour my own wine! You guys are being too generous. People who drink together are family, and there's no status difference between us! You guys shouldn't trouble yourselves, too!"

Fiona and the others finally realized what happened. What Skyler said was too shocking for them. Why did they have the feeling that Jack was much stronger than him, to the point that an eight-star King of War had to pour wine for Jack? What this old man said was too...

Jack was just as speechless about what happened. It was fine for Skyler to join them and have drinks, but why did he have to say something like that?

Jack smiled embarrassingly and offered, "That won't work. Even if we don't consider your status as the King of War, I should consider you as my elder with your age. Shouldn't I be the one to fill your wine glass?"

Skyler immediately responded with a smile. "Oh, but of course! You're very humble, my boy! Come, let's drink together!"

"Of course! Come, let's drink!" Fiona and the others were elated. Joan, who seldom drank, also joined in the toast. After all, it was bad to not honor the eight-star King of War.

The last thing everyone expected was for Sharon to barge in at that very moment. "Is everything alright? Jack, are you okay?" Those who guarded the door knew that she was Jack's friend, so they let her and her bodyguards enter without informing the others.

Sharon instantly hurried toward Jack and ran her hands all over his body. "How are you feeling?" fretted Sharon. "Are you hurt?"

Jack was downright flustered; so many eyes were on him!

"Well, nothing happened," came Jack's immediate answer. "Miss Sharon, I don't know what you're talking about. Don't I look fine?"

Sharon instantaneously relaxed after Jack's reply. "Really? Thank goodness you're alright. I was so

scared when I heard my father say that you overturned the Kingston Hall, Green Sky Hall and the other powerful clans. I thought that you'd be hurt as you killed so many people on your own!" It was only then when she looked at Selena, who was by the side, and realized that she did too much. She smiled embarrassingly and blushed.

Chapter 834

"What?!" shrieked Fiona upon hearing what Sharon had said. "How's that possible? Miss Sharon, have you gotten some things mixed up here? The four powerful clans that had hordes of men, together with the Wilson family, were overturned by Jack?"

Jack stood, petrified and flabbergasted. If he let Sharon continue to run her mouth, his identity would be exposed for sure.

Sharon frowned and said, "There... There's no actual evidence, so I think so...? My father told me about it!"

Jack laughed and said calmly, "I thank you for your concern, Miss Sharon, but you must've made a mistake here. How can I accomplish such a feat? The only person here who can do that would only be Skyler Celestino, an eight-star King of War!"

He immediately changed the subject as he spoke, "Quick, bring some utensils for Miss Sharon. Since you're here, come eat and drink with us!"

Sharon smiled. "Oh my, King of War Celestino is also here. If that's the case, I'd accept this with great honor!"

"That's for sure, Miss Sharon. Don't hesitate the next time you feel like coming over. Just treat this place like it's yours, alright?" Fiona felt utterly pleased at that moment, though she wondered what had happened as important people like King of War Skyler Celestino and Sharon George visited them in their residence.

“Really? Then I’ll definitely come and hang out when I’m free!” Sharon laughed and secretly glanced at Jack, her face red due to shyness.

Fiona had high hopes that Jack would marry Sharon, since their family would amass quite the wealth from their marriage.

Unfortunately, Jack—that blockhead—refused to obey her, and Fiona was at a loss for words at the fact. She could not tie Jack up and force him to get married, right?

Fiona could only hope that Jack and Sharon would get closer after meeting each other more and more.

“That’s weird. If it’s not Jack, who would it be? This person is too strong!” Nobody anticipated that Sharon would whisper to herself after she sat down.

“Who cares about who that person is? It’s definitely not Jack!” Fiona remarked at that moment. “Jack is quite strong, and he won’t break a sweat if he’s to fight ten to twenty people at once, but it’s impossible for him to kill a few hundred or thousands of people. How can he be that strong? If he’s so strong, he’d be a seven or eight-star King of War, don’t you think? Wouldn’t that mean that we don’t need to worry about anything else in our lives?”

Jack purposely chimed in, “That’s right! How I wish that’s me, though. How good would it be if I’m that strong! Pitifully, I can only worship that kind of person!”

“Come now, let’s not trouble ourselves about this person. In my opinion, this person must be a heroic, stalwart character, and he might also be a master from a different city. After all, Kingston Hall, Green Sky Hall, and Eagle Clan are hidden powers, thus it’s only plausible that they must’ve offended many people and had many enemies.

“This time, they must’ve offended someone they couldn’t afford to, thus resulting in their ultimate downfall,” commented Skyler as he helped Jack smooth things over. “There are so many small and big powers in this world. It’s normal for powers to grow and for some to disappear. Normal occurrences,

nothing new.”

“Yes, that’s right. Come, let’s all enjoy our drinks. We’re lucky that King of War Celestino granted us a visit and is drinking with us here at our house!” Jack raised his wine glass, and everybody started drinking again.

It was only after a few glasses did Skyler asked, “By the way, how’s the preparation for Miss Selena’s birthday party? There are only six days left. I’ll be sure to attend to have a drink or two!”

“Everything is prepared. We welcome King of War Celestino if you can attend the party!” Jack smiled.

Chapter 835

“Oh, my! That’s great!” gushed Fiona with a smile upon hearing Skyler’s comment. “King of War Celestino, I’ll be frank with you: Cecilia Taylor of the Taylor family is also getting married to Kelly Gold of the Gold family on that day. They’ve already sent out the invitations, and I’m afraid that everybody will choose to attend their wedding instead of coming to our party!”

“And how is that possible? Even if everybody else attends Kelly and Cecilia’s wedding, I won’t give them any face. I’ll be sure to attend the birthday party Jack is hosting for Selena. After all, I like this young guy!” Skyler chuckled. What he wanted to say was that all the majors, Kings of War, and maybe even Gods of War would attend the birthday party Jack prepared for Selena.

“Me too! I’ll definitely attend Sister Selena’s birthday party!” Sharon declared her decision with a grin.

“Thank you very much, you two. I’m so worried that nobody would come to the party, and that’d be so embarrassing!” Andrew was grateful. “It’s good that both of you will be coming, even if the others won’t. After all, Miss Sharon and King of War Celestino are important people!”

“That’s too generous of you to say. Too generous!” Skyler immediately said seriously. “Brother, you should drink a glass of wine as your punishment!”

“Yes, I should be punished!” Andrew immediately poured a glass of wine for himself and happily drank it down.

Meanwhile...

...

The quartet—Neil Hugo, Ivan Taylor, Ken Clark, and Xena Jackson—were in a bar as they drank.

Ken mulled over his thoughts for a moment before he began, “By the way, did you guys know about the huge news that Kingston Hall and four other powerful clans had been overthrown?!”

“Yes, it’s a really big issue. My father had just told me to keep a low-profile and not offend anybody, but I think he’s just being too careful for his own good!” Neil smiled bitterly, took the wine glass in front of him, and finished all the wine.

Ken, on the other hand, had a frown on his face. “I wonder who that person is; he’s really too strong. On another note, it’s six days to Selena’s birthday party. I wonder how Jack is doing now. The poison should be doing its job!”

“Yes, I’ve been thinking about it too. It’s unfortunate that Xena isn’t with Ben right now as can’t get any news about Jack’s situation. This guy’s got a healthy physique and is rather skilled in fighting. I wonder how he is right now after consuming the poison,” Neil responded.

Ivan thought about it, swirled the wine in the glass, and smiled in a contemplating way. “I think that his body is so weak right now that he’d fall from a light touch from others. Don’t you think so?”

Ken started laughing after he heard this. “I don’t think that far-fetched, but a normal person would’ve

fallen at this point. Jack is quite strong and was a soldier for five years, but I think that his body is almost the same as a normal person's body right now. Any bodyguard would be able to hurt him!"

"He must've discovered that something's wrong by now. I wonder if both he and Selena are worried about what to do next!" Ivan smirked. "No matter. In order to be safe, I think that it's best for us to find a chance and check the situation at their place. I want to see his progress after being poisoned!"

"That's right. After all, his house is just opposite ours. I'll go with you tomorrow. Let's hold hands and go make Ben angry!" said Xena with an impish smirk.

"Honey, you're really naughty, but I like it!" Ivan chuckled.

P.S. I apologize for delayed upload again, I fell asleep after I posted the Amazing Son-In-Law updates.
No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 831-835

Chapter 831

Spectre nodded as he spoke.

After a while, James went to visit Timothy.

Timothy glanced at James before he shifted his gaze and ignored James.

"I'm here today to tell you something," began James as he kept his gaze on Timothy. "It's best if you cease all thoughts of getting back at Jack. Kingston Clan, Green Sky Hall, the Wilson family, and Eagle Clan were all overthrown in just one night. All their masters and leaders are dead. Those that remain aren't skillful enough, so they ran away from Eastfield last night!"

"What?!" Timothy was shocked. "You're saying that both large clans, Kingston Hall and Eagle Clan,

together with the Wilson family and Green Sky Hall, have been destroyed?!”

James nodded. “We investigated the matter and discovered that Jack was behind their ultimate downfall. These four powers worked together to kidnap Jack’s daughter. Jack went to Blaze Mountain alone, and the path he walked was littered with corpses. This caused all four powers to disappear from Eastfield!”

“He went alone? Impossible... That’s impossible! How can he be so powerful? He’s no God of War!” Timothy shook his head vehemently. All he thought of for the past two days was how he could get back at Jack and end him, once and for all.

If what his father said was true, did that not mean that he would never get his revenge?

“Even if he’s no God of War, his fighting ability can rival theirs. Such a person is really too scary!” James smiled bitterly and advised, “Timothy, I know that you hate him very much, but you can’t do anything about it. I’ve urged you many times to befriend Jack and not offend him, yet my words fell on deaf ears. Shouldn’t you reflect the reason why you’re in this situation now?”

As he noted Timothy remained silent, James continued, “Do you think that I’d purposely give up getting justice for you? I’m not afraid, but I had to weigh everything in life. If we really went on a quest for vengeance, the entire Drake family would be involved. By then, we won’t be able to avenge you. That’s not getting revenge; that’s going on a suicide mission! Apart from that, why did you try to take advantage of Selena? You would’ve been dead had you been someone else. Jack has been benevolent enough to keep you alive!”

“I get it, Father!” Timothy eventually conceded and nodded. “Jack is really too strong. Who knew that he’d hide his true powers so well? Now, he’s destroyed three clans at one go, and two of those clans are really big ones. The hidden powers in Eastfield would act much more cautiously in the future!”

James nodded. “That’s right. We dared not offend Kingston Hall and Eagle Clan before because they had the upper hand, a higher edge than us, but things have now changed. With both clans gone, the other clans can’t even compare to first-class aristocratic families. We’ve no need to fear anything else in the future. We’ll be fine as long as we don’t offend powerful people like Jack or the Gods of War.”

“It’s quite late at night... Rest early.” James sighed inwardly when he saw Timothy withering in front of him and walked downstairs.

He knew his son could not resign to this ending, but what else could they have done? Jack’s power was so much more than they initially thought.

Chapter 832

“It’s horrifying... It’s too horrifying. All four powers have been destroyed overnight!” The George family’s master was just as shocked.

He looked at Sharon—who sat before him—and said, “Sharon, do you know the results of our investigation? The destruction of these four powers was done by one person! There’s a huge possibility that he did it on his own!”

“How’s that possible? One person? Are you telling me that one person did all of that?” Sharon looked at her father with widened eyes as she shared her father’s astonishment.

The George family’s master nodded. “Yes, and this person is none other than Jack!”

“How’s that possible? That’s impossible!” Sharon could not believe her ears. “While Jack is rather strong, he can’t be that powerful. The masters of Kingston Hall have the power comparable to Kings of War, what more the masters of the other powers. I think that apart from the Gods of War or eight-star King of Wars like Skyler Celestino, nobody can manage this. Even Skyler Celestino would get hurt if he’s surrounded by so many people and killed so many...”

“He’s hurt!” Sharon suddenly stood up. “Father, are you sure that the investigation showed a huge possibility that it’s Jack?”

“Yes. Somebody kidnapped his daughter that afternoon, and Jack left the city right after,” answered the

George family's master.

"That's bad! Even if Jack is alive, he must be injured! I need to go visit him!" Sharon was extremely anxious and ran out of the villa.

"This..." The George family's master chuckled bitterly as he saw Sharon running out. "Did this girl forget that Jack is a miracle-working doctor? He cured you, so it's only right that he'd be alright, don't you think?"

He sighed. "Sadly, this is unrequited love. We'd be very fortunate if my daughter can marry someone like Jack!"

...

Jack and the others were eating when an old man walked in. "Seems like I've come at the right time. I'm blessed with some great food!"

"King of War Celestino!" Andrew and Fiona stood up in excitement when they saw that the eight-star King of War Skyler Celestino came to their residence.

"Oh my, an honorable guest is here! Quickly, prepare utensils for the King of War Celestino!" Andrew was beyond thrilled. He was an eight-star King of War—a person who could get everything he wanted—and he came as their guest.

"I happened to pass by, so I thought I could stop by for a drink!" Skyler laughed and sat beside Jack. "How is everything? Are you still satisfied with the bodyguards I introduced you?"

Skyler knew Jack was the one who destroyed all four powers. He also believed that Jack would suffer no injuries, even if he was alone when he fought such forces.

“Satisfied. I’m very satisfied with them, especially with Elaine, who’s about to become Ben’s wife,” beamed Jack, followed with a chuckle.

Chapter 833

The corners of Skyler’s mouth twitched when Jack revealed the news. After all, Elaine was his disciple.

He slapped his thigh and irritably commented, “What the hell? Why didn’t Elaine tell me this? That’s disrespectful; I’m her master!”

“What? Elaine is your disciple?” Fiona was beyond thrilled to have heard such a pleasant fact. When Ben would marry Elaine, would they be able to raise their family status with the master-disciple relationship between Elaine and Skyler? If anything happened, Skyler could not just ignore it, no?

Unfortunately, Elaine and Ben were not present at the table and were at their internet cafe instead. It would be good if they were here. Ben could share a drink or two with Skyler and improve their relationship.

“That’s right! That girl should’ve mentioned it to me!” Skyler said happily. “Had you guys not told me about it, I probably would only find out on the day of their marriage!”

“Come, drink! Let’s have a drink!” Jack laughed, picked up the red wine bottle in front of him, and poured wine for Skyler.

“Oh my, how can you pour wine for me?” Skyler was startled since it was the Supreme Warrior in front of him. He mindlessly blurted, “I should be pouring wine for you!”

Right as he spoke that, he realized he made a fatal mistake. Jack concealed his true identity and nobody at the table—including Selena—knew that he was the Supreme Warrior.

Skyler gave an embarrassed smile as he was met with odd looks sent his way, and he sheepishly explained, "I mean, I can do this myself. Surely I can do this myself as I like to pour my own wine! You guys are being too generous. People who drink together are family, and there's no status difference between us! You guys shouldn't trouble yourselves, too!"

Fiona and the others finally realized what happened. What Skyler said was too shocking for them. Why did they have the feeling that Jack was much stronger than him, to the point that an eight-star King of War had to pour wine for Jack? What this old man said was too...

Jack was just as speechless about what happened. It was fine for Skyler to join them and have drinks, but why did he have to say something like that?

Jack smiled embarrassingly and offered, "That won't work. Even if we don't consider your status as the King of War, I should consider you as my elder with your age. Shouldn't I be the one to fill your wine glass?"

Skyler immediately responded with a smile. "Oh, but of course! You're very humble, my boy! Come, let's drink together!"

"Of course! Come, let's drink!" Fiona and the others were elated. Joan, who seldom drank, also joined in the toast. After all, it was bad to not honor the eight-star King of War.

The last thing everyone expected was for Sharon to barge in at that very moment. "Is everything alright? Jack, are you okay?" Those who guarded the door knew that she was Jack's friend, so they let her and her bodyguards enter without informing the others.

Sharon instantly hurried toward Jack and ran her hands all over his body. "How are you feeling?" fretted Sharon. "Are you hurt?"

Jack was downright flustered; so many eyes were on him!

“Well, nothing happened,” came Jack’s immediate answer. “Miss Sharon, I don’t know what you’re talking about. Don’t I look fine?”

Sharon instantaneously relaxed after Jack’s reply. “Really? Thank goodness you’re alright. I was so scared when I heard my father say that you overturned the Kingston Hall, Green Sky Hall and the other powerful clans. I thought that you’d be hurt as you killed so many people on your own!” It was only then when she looked at Selena, who was by the side, and realized that she did too much. She smiled embarrassingly and blushed.

Chapter 834

“What?!” shrieked Fiona upon hearing what Sharon had said. “How’s that possible? Miss Sharon, have you gotten some things mixed up here? The four powerful clans that had hordes of men, together with the Wilson family, were overturned by Jack?”

Jack stood, petrified and flabbergasted. If he let Sharon continue to run her mouth, his identity would be exposed for sure.

Sharon frowned and said, “There... There’s no actual evidence, so I think so...? My father told me about it!”

Jack laughed and said calmly, “I thank you for your concern, Miss Sharon, but you must’ve made a mistake here. How can I accomplish such a feat? The only person here who can do that would only be Skyler Celestino, an eight-star King of War!”

He immediately changed the subject as he spoke, “Quick, bring some utensils for Miss Sharon. Since you’re here, come eat and drink with us!”

Sharon smiled. “Oh my, King of War Celestino is also here. If that’s the case, I’d accept this with great honor!”

“That’s for sure, Miss Sharon. Don’t hesitate the next time you feel like coming over. Just treat this place like it’s yours, alright?” Fiona felt utterly pleased at that moment, though she wondered what had happened as important people like King of War Skyler Celestino and Sharon George visited them in their residence.

“Really? Then I’ll definitely come and hang out when I’m free!” Sharon laughed and secretly glanced at Jack, her face red due to shyness.

Fiona had high hopes that Jack would marry Sharon, since their family would amass quite the wealth from their marriage.

Unfortunately, Jack—that blockhead—refused to obey her, and Fiona was at a loss for words at the fact. She could not tie Jack up and force him to get married, right?

Fiona could only hope that Jack and Sharon would get closer after meeting each other more and more.

“That’s weird. If it’s not Jack, who would it be? This person is too strong!” Nobody anticipated that Sharon would whisper to herself after she sat down.

“Who cares about who that person is? It’s definitely not Jack!” Fiona remarked at that moment. “Jack is quite strong, and he won’t break a sweat if he’s to fight ten to twenty people at once, but it’s impossible for him to kill a few hundred or thousands of people. How can he be that strong? If he’s so strong, he’d be a seven or eight-star King of War, don’t you think? Wouldn’t that mean that we don’t need to worry about anything else in our lives?”

Jack purposely chimed in, “That’s right! How I wish that’s me, though. How good would it be if I’m that strong! Pitifully, I can only worship that kind of person!”

“Come now, let’s not trouble ourselves about this person. In my opinion, this person must be a heroic, stalwart character, and he might also be a master from a different city. After all, Kingston Hall, Green Sky Hall, and Eagle Clan are hidden powers, thus it’s only plausible that they must’ve offended many

people and had many enemies.

“This time, they must’ve offended someone they couldn’t afford to, thus resulting in their ultimate downfall,” commented Skyler as he helped Jack smooth things over. “There are so many small and big powers in this world. It’s normal for powers to grow and for some to disappear. Normal occurrences, nothing new.”

“Yes, that’s right. Come, let’s all enjoy our drinks. We’re lucky that King of War Celestino granted us a visit and is drinking with us here at our house!” Jack raised his wine glass, and everybody started drinking again.

It was only after a few glasses did Skyler asked, “By the way, how’s the preparation for Miss Selena’s birthday party? There are only six days left. I’ll be sure to attend to have a drink or two!”

“Everything is prepared. We welcome King of War Celestino if you can attend the party!” Jack smiled.

Chapter 835

“Oh, my! That’s great!” gushed Fiona with a smile upon hearing Skyler’s comment. “King of War Celestino, I’ll be frank with you: Cecilia Taylor of the Taylor family is also getting married to Kelly Gold of the Gold family on that day. They’ve already sent out the invitations, and I’m afraid that everybody will choose to attend their wedding instead of coming to our party!”

“And how is that possible? Even if everybody else attends Kelly and Cecilia’s wedding, I won’t give them any face. I’ll be sure to attend the birthday party Jack is hosting for Selena. After all, I like this young guy!” Skyler chuckled. What he wanted to say was that all the majors, Kings of War, and maybe even Gods of War would attend the birthday party Jack prepared for Selena.

“Me too! I’ll definitely attend Sister Selena’s birthday party!” Sharon declared her decision with a grin.

“Thank you very much, you two. I’m so worried that nobody would come to the party, and that’d be so embarrassing!” Andrew was grateful. “It’s good that both of you will be coming, even if the others won’t.

After all, Miss Sharon and King of War Celestino are important people!”

“That’s too generous of you to say. Too generous!” Skyler immediately said seriously. “Brother, you should drink a glass of wine as your punishment!”

“Yes, I should be punished!” Andrew immediately poured a glass of wine for himself and happily drank it down.

Meanwhile...

...

The quartet—Neil Hugo, Ivan Taylor, Ken Clark, and Xena Jackson—were in a bar as they drank.

Ken mulled over his thoughts for a moment before he began, “By the way, did you guys know about the huge news that Kingston Hall and four other powerful clans had been overthrown?!”

“Yes, it’s a really big issue. My father had just told me to keep a low-profile and not offend anybody, but I think he’s just being too careful for his own good!” Neil smiled bitterly, took the wine glass in front of him, and finished all the wine.

Ken, on the other hand, had a frown on his face. “I wonder who that person is; he’s really too strong. On another note, it’s six days to Selena’s birthday party. I wonder how Jack is doing now. The poison should be doing its job!”

“Yes, I’ve been thinking about it too. It’s unfortunate that Xena isn’t with Ben right now as can’t get any news about Jack’s situation. This guy’s got a healthy physique and is rather skilled in fighting. I wonder how he is right now after consuming the poison,” Neil responded.

Ivan thought about it, swirled the wine in the glass, and smiled in a contemplating way. "I think that his body is so weak right now that he'd fall from a light touch from others. Don't you think so?"

Ken started laughing after he heard this. "I don't think that far-fetched, but a normal person would've fallen at this point. Jack is quite strong and was a soldier for five years, but I think that his body is almost the same as a normal person's body right now. Any bodyguard would be able to hurt him!"

"He must've discovered that something's wrong by now. I wonder if both he and Selena are worried about what to do next!" Ivan smirked. "No matter. In order to be safe, I think that it's best for us to find a chance and check the situation at their place. I want to see his progress after being poisoned!"

"That's right. After all, his house is just opposite ours. I'll go with you tomorrow. Let's hold hands and go make Ben angry!" said Xena with an impish smirk.

"Honey, you're really naughty, but I like it!" Ivan chuckled.

P.S. I apologize for delayed upload again, I fell asleep after I posted the Amazing Son-In-Law updates.
No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 836-840

Chapter 836

Early the next morning, while Selena, Jack, and the others were taking a stroll in the yard, Ivan and Xena walked over while holding hands.

"Ivan, why are you here?" Selena's face immediately darkened when she saw Ivan and Xena. She asked unwelcomingly.

Not only did Ivan snatch Ben's girlfriend. Ivan still got together with Xena when he knew that Xena was Ben's girlfriend. Although she had hated this woman since earlier on and wanted Ben to break up with her. They were obviously humiliating Ben.

“Hey, Can’t I come over? We are a family, can’t I come over to take a look?” Ivan smiled and said. “I’m here to ask about the preparation for Selena’s birthday party. I heard that Kelly and Cecilia booked the top floor of a six-star hotel!”

When Ivan was speaking, he was staring at Jack. He wanted to observe if Jack appeared weaker.

“you don’t need to be worried about this matter, I trust my husband. When he said that everything is prepared, then everything will be prepared. I also believe that my husband will surprise me!” Selena smiled coldly and showed an estranged expression to Ivan.

“Oh my, honey, I wonder what’s wrong with me. I feel dizzy and my limbs feel weak. Sometimes, I even experience breathlessness and pain in my chest. I feel so weak!” Jack was not dumb and he soon understood why the other party was there. He rubbed his head on purpose and put on a weak look with a frown on his face.

“How’s that possible. Jack, are you alright?” Selena was shocked when she heard this. Jack was still fine last night. Why did he suddenly feel unwell today?

Xena and Ivan glanced at each other when they heard that. They were extremely happy as the poison must have taken effect. Although Jack did not show it in an obvious manner nor did he seem to be extremely weak, it might just be something related to his physical strength.

“It’s nothing, maybe it has something to do with the fact that I haven’t rested well for a few days!” Jack smiled indifferently and said.

“Do you want to go and get a checkup at the hospital?” Selena was still slightly worried and continued asking.

“There’s no need for that, honey!” Jack shrugged his shoulders. “Look, don’t I look a lot better now? Apart from that, I’m a doctor myself. I have examined myself and didn’t discover anything wrong. It

might just be a lack of rest!”

Ivan and Xena were extremely happy when they heard this.

“Oh my, isn’t that Ben? You’re back?” At that moment, Xena greeted Ben when she saw Ben walking in with two pretty bodyguards. “How are you doing recently? We haven’t met for some time but why do I feel that you still look the same as you were previously? Why are you still dressed so plainly?”

Ivan, on the other hand, said with a smile. “I heard that you’ve opened up an internet cafe and is now a business owner? Do you have a girlfriend yet? Let me tell you about my girlfriend. She’s so pretty and so wild at night!”

“Hey, you!” Xena blushed and lightly pushed Ivan on his chest with her delicate fist.

Chapter 837

“Everything is fine as I’m quite easily satisfied!” Ben smiled and glanced at Elaine, who was standing beside him.

Elaine smiled sweetly back and held onto Ben’s hand. “Xena Jackson, I really don’t know how to thank you. You gave up such a good man and I’ve gotten this precious person now!”

“You...you’ve gotten a girlfriend?” Ivan’s face darkened when he saw them. He was slightly envious as Elaine had a good figure and beautiful eyes. She also looked younger and prettier than Xena and had a fairy-like aura.

“That’s for sure. Do I, Ben Taylor, look like someone who can’t get a girlfriend?” Ben snorted coldly, glanced at Xena, and said. “I believe that I’m much better than someone who’s been toyed by many motor robbers previously. I heard my sister mentioned this before but I refused to believe it. Haha, now I finally understand how cheap someone can be! You can get her as long as you have money!”

“You...” Xena was extremely angry. Ivan knew nothing about her past with the motor robbers. She had no idea that Ben would mention that at this moment.

Ivan’s face immediately darkened. He knew the last time he slept with Xena, she was no longer a virgin and thought that Ben was the one who slept with Xena previously. He had no idea that Xena had crossed paths with many gangsters in the past. How could he remain calm when he knew that this woman had slept with so many men?

Apart from that, Ben’s current girlfriend was so much prettier compared to Xena.

“Is he telling the truth?” Ivan looked at Xena and asked with a dark expression on his face.

“Ivan, don’t believe in the nonsense he just said. I did hang out with the motor robbers previously but we only enjoyed a couple of drinks together. I’m not a casual woman!” Xena was so frightened that she explained hastily to Ivan.

The current Taylor family was a second-class aristocratic family and Ivan Taylor was the young master of a second-class aristocratic family. If they get married soon after, she would be a young mistress. Was this not the life she wanted since long ago?

Ivan wanted to scold Xena loudly. However, he thought about it and realized that he could not be in a conflict with Xena right now.

After all, the situation would turn against him if he angered Xena and she told on him about poisoning Jack. Even Old Master Taylor would change his opinion about him if the old master knew of such a despicable act.

Ivan understood clearly that Old Master Taylor was someone who paid attention to integrity and uprightness. He would not condone someone who used such despicable ways.

“Ben, I know that you’re trying to drive a wedge between us. In your dreams, I’m not falling for this trick of yours!” Ivan laughed. He pulled Xena’s hand and said, “Come, let’s go. I do not want to waste time speaking to these people!”

After taking several steps, Ivan thought about it, turned around, and said to Jack, “By the way, Jack, although Selena’s birthday is on the same day as Cecilia’s wedding, you don’t need to worry about anything. I will definitely make time to attend. After all, Selena is also my cousin and all of us are from the Taylor family, I will definitely give face to you guys!”

Jack smiled coldly after he heard this and said, “It doesn’t matter if you give me face or not. After all, we don’t really welcome you. You might be disappointed when you come over!”

Jack knew clearly that Ivan wanted to come to the birthday party to see how he dies. However, Ivan would be very disappointed by then.

“Ivan, don’t believe a word the crazy Ben said. He hates me because he can’t get me!” After they exited the villa, Xena smiled and explained to Ivan.

Chapter 838

“Baby, don’t you worry about it. I don’t believe what Ben had said as it’s obvious that he’s purposely trying to drive a wedge in between us. I definitely see his motives!” Ivan hugged Xena and smiled.

However, he was secretly unhappy. Xena was a woman who loved money and he could clearly feel that this woman was a total gold digger so what Ben said was clearly true.

When he thought of this, he strengthened the decision to not marry Xena.

However, he could not have a fall out with Xena right now and tell her that he’s not marrying her. If not, this girl might tell others about how he asked her to poison Jack. Would it not be terrible if Jack managed to find an antidote within these last few days?

He could not take the risk although the possibility was low.

Hence, he had to wait several days until after Jack's death. By then, he could think of ways to break up with her, give her some money, and get her to leave.

"Ivan is really shameless. I think he's here to make fun of Jack. How dare he come over on purpose to ask about the preparation for Selena's birthday!" Ben smiled, held Elaine's hand, and entered the villa.

"Jack, are you alright? Do you really feel uncomfortable?" After Ivan and Xena left, Selena still looked at Jack worryingly.

Jack felt warm in his heart. "Silly, I feel very good now. Don't you realize what Ivan and Xena are here to check on? They are here to look at how I will be when the poison kicks in. They are here to test the waters and since they want to see me dying from the poison so badly, I gave him a taste of it!"

"Oh, I see... you're really bad. How can you be so good at acting that I was also almost tricked by you!" Selena relaxed. She glanced at Jack coquettishly and that look made Jack enchanted.

"what to do? My wife is a dumb girl with no brains!" Jack laughed and said.

Selena blushed, looked around, and said after she discovered that nobody was there. "It's all because of you, recently you kept... Humph! How dare you describe me like that. You're not allowed to touch me tonight!"

"Honey, I'm sorry!"

"Go away!"

...

Time flew and news about the four powerful clans were destroyed soon passed by. Everyone stopped discussing it and everything returned to its usual ways.

Finally, the day of Selena's birthday party and Cecilia's wedding dinner came.

"Dear, where's the hotel you booked?" Selena, who had already dressed up, came downstairs and asked Jack.

Although she felt that what Jack said about holding a city-stirring party was slightly overboard but she still looked forward to it.

Jack glanced at the time and smiled slightly. "Let's go. All of us should leave now! I've booked a big hotel and it's a seven-star hotel!"

"Seven-star?! Jack, are you joking? How much would that cost? You must be joking, right?" Ben inhaled a cold breath when he heard this as he was extremely shocked.

"I believe in our master!" Elaine smiled. Jack was the Supreme Warrior and such an event would be nothing to him!

"You must be boasting again! Why don't you tell us that you're holding the party on the top floor of the seven-star hotel?" Fiona rolled her eyes at Jack and said angrily. She felt that Jack was unreliable.

"Hey, mother-in-law, you're really a prophet! That's exactly it!" Jack smiled. "Let's go, the fleet of cars are waiting for us at the entrance!"

“A fleet?”

The public was shocked once again.

Everyone walked out. Only then did they notice a fleet of 100 Rolls-Royces, parked at the entrance.

“Are you kidding me? Even if you rent 100 cars, it would cost a hefty sum of money. And they’re all new!”

Ben gulped.

“Jack, don’t tell me this is the fleet that we’re going to take? And why are there fresh flowers on the cars? Why are they all decorated like wedding cars? And there are words reading ‘Just Got Married’ on it!”

Fiona looked completely taken aback. Her eyes nearly popped out of her sockets. It could not have been cheap, even if they were just rented cars.

“Oh, I know. It’s so obvious that these are wedding cars. They must be the ones that Kelly prepared for Cecelia!”

Andrew’s face darkened. “That Kelly and Cecelia,” he huffed. “Why did they park their wedding cars at our gates? Are they trying to disgust us on purpose?”

Fiona finally snapped into her senses. That was right. How could a good-for-nothing like Jack have the money to hire such a fleet!

Only the Gold family could probably come up with such a huge amount of money. After all, this was for the wedding ceremony of their young master.

Yet at this moment, another fleet of cars was driving by not too far away. These were wedding cars as well—Porsches, Bentleys, Audis, and BMWs. All of them were luxury cars.

However, this car fleet was insignificant compared to the 100 Rolls-Royces.

Plenty of passersby whipped out their phones to take photos when they saw the sight. Both of the fleets filled them with admiration.

Selena had been surprised as well when she saw so many Rolls-Royces parked at the gate. Then her heart leaped with delight.

The Taylor family had just exited from the place. Each of them was overjoyed, knowing that the fleet had come.

However, disappointment tinged her heart when she heard her father's words. He was right, there were so many Rolls-Royces. No way that Jack had prepared all that.

Yet she never expected the fleet of cars to actually stop at the entrance of the Taylor family's villa.

This stunned her once again.

Jack smiled and took her hand in his. "Selena, I've prepared this fleet of cars for you. Don't worry about the money. You'll be the most beautiful bride today!"

"Bride? Isn't this a birthday party?"

Selena was extremely shocked. Her lips parted in disbelief.

“Idiot. I owe you a proper wedding ceremony too. This has been stirring within me all this while, so today is actually the belated day of our wedding!”

Jack smiled, affection filled up his eyes.

“Jack, are—are you saying that you really prepared this entire fleet of cars for us? But what about the wedding dress? Shouldn’t I be wearing a wedding dress for a wedding? And you should have prepared a ring!”

Fiona was extremely excited now, and could not be bothered to ask where Jack had gotten the money. Jack was going to make both her and her husband’s reputation skyrocket to the heavens. She even felt a shortness of breath.

“Mom, Jack has already given me the ring. I’m wearing it right now.”

Selena rolled her eyes at her mother. “Aren’t you being too greedy?”

“What about a wedding dress? There should at least be a dress for a wedding.”

Fiona immediately pressed on.

“Don’t worry, Mother. A professional makeup team is awaiting Selena at the hotel!”

Jack grinned. “We can’t miss that out since it’s a wedding. And I’ve even prepared a necklace for her!”

He took off the necklace that Selena was currently wearing around her neck. “You’ll be wearing that necklace instead!” he said, smiling.

Chapter 840

“What’s going on over there?”

Kelly, the head of the Gold family, and the others were also in their own fleet of cars. Each of them was elated.

The fleet that they had prepared today was pretty good.

However, they were instantly shellshocked after they got down from the cars, noticing the numerous cars parked in front of the entrance leading to the villa belonging to Jack and the others.

They had only prepared twenty cars for their fleet, but they had nearly a hundred—and all of them were Rolls-Royce.

“No way. Did Jack prepare all of that for Selena?”

The Taylor family had arrived as well. All of them were stupefied.

“Jack seems to be in good spirits!”

Ivan squinted at Jack from a distance. Confusion overtook him. Was he seeing things? According to logic, he should not even be able to get up right now. Was it because his body was so strong that he was still able to hold on until now?

“No way. They’re all wedding cars!”

Cecilia, who was in a wedding gown, quirked her lips at the corners. She did not believe that Jack had prepared those wedding cars for Selena.

“That’s right. No way that’s happening!”

“Selena’s not even in a wedding dress,” Xena interjected, smirking. “How could that be the case?”

However, as soon as she said that, she herself did not quite believe her own words. After all, the only villa on the other side of the street belonged to Jack and the others. There were no other luxury villas around them.

The next second, shock rippled throughout everyone. The chauffeur who stood before Jack and the others actually opened the car door for them.

Jack waved toward the people on the other side before getting in the car.

“This...”

Even Master Gold’s complexion had gone pale. His son was having a wedding now. Was Jack also having a wedding ceremony with Selena? More importantly, their fleet of cars had already lost out to his. It was a huge blow to his reputation.

“Let’s go. Get into the car!”

In the end, Master Gold could only flash an awkward smile and tell everyone to hop into the cars.

“Let’s follow them!”

Jack told the driver.

Soon enough, the Gold family's car fleet headed the procession, and Jack's car fleet followed them at a leisurely pace.

"Jack did promise that he would send ripples throughout the city. Does he think he can do that just by hiring a fleet of cars like that? What a joke. There are plenty of other things to spend on for a wedding!"

Master Gold, who was sitting beside Old Master Taylor, chuckled before speaking, "We've booked the top floor of a six-star hotel, Mr. Taylor. We wanted to book one from a seven-star hotel, but we never thought that another tycoon would book the place faster than we did. He booked the entire hotel!"

Here, Master Gold paused for a while before continuing in a careless tone, "So we'll have to trouble you for a while. We really had no choice. We never expected this!"

"The entire hotel? How flamboyant. He'd have to spend at least ten billion dollars."

Old Master Taylor took a sharp intake of breath when he heard that. The Taylor family was a second-class aristocratic family now, but they would never spend that much money for a wedding ceremony. It was like burning money, as though it grew from trees.

Even the venue that Kelly had booked could not have been cheap. It was a pretty luxurious place, and it cost them nearly 200 million dollars. Yet that mystery man had booked an entire seven-star hotel.

"Huh. Why is Jack's fleet of cars trailing after us?" No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 841-845

Chapter 841

Quickly enough, Master Gold seemed to realize that something was amiss. He frowned. He felt

dissatisfied. What on earth was Jack following them for?

“Perhaps it’s a coincidence. Maybe they so happen to be going this way!”

Old Man Taylor furrowed his brows. Jack had said that he wanted to throw a birthday party for Selena, but he had been secretive about it. He did not even give them an invitation—in fact, he never even told them about the date and location.

He had even assumed that Jack would have thought that the act was meaningless, considering that the Taylor family and plenty of other aristocratic families would be attending Cecilia’s wedding instead of their birthday party. He had assumed that was the reason why Jack had not told anyone about it.

However, he never expected that Jack would cook up such a display today. The young man must have spent a fortune on the car fleet. Did he truly arrange all that?

“I know!”

At this moment, Master Gold slapped his thigh. “It must be due to that seven-star hotel being booked by a super tycoon family, and Jack and the others probably just hitched a ride from some other person to get to their own hotel, which happens to be around that area, so it’ll be along the way... He’s just doing it for the sake of his vanity.”

“No way. Those are wedding cars. How could anyone agree to that?”

Old Man Taylor flashed a bitter smile. “I think Jack is just bending over backward to maintain his dignity. Ah, young people these days. Never mind them. It’s Cecilia’s wedding today. We’ll definitely take part in it!”

The Gold family’s fleet of cars soon arrived at the entrance of the six-star hotel. When they stopped, they realized that Jack’s fleet of cars drove on and parked near the entrance of the seven-star hotel.

“No—no way!”

The members of the Taylor and the Gold family were all stunned at the sight once they got down from the car. The seven-star hotel had been entirely booked by a mystery tycoon. Was the mystery tycoon Jack himself?

A red carpet had been unfurled before the hotel entrance. Jack walked forward, Selena’s hand in his, and rose petals slowly drifted over their heads.

“It’s beautiful!”

Selena lifted her chin, shocked. The petals were falling from the highest floor, dancing with a lazy breeze. It was as though it was raining roses.

Suddenly, the entire hotel transformed into a screen—and Selena’s smiling face appeared on it, the beautiful expression captured by a passing drone.

“Not bad. Not bad at all!”

Fiona, Ben, and the others were all extremely moved.

Did Jack actually book this entire hotel? Where did he even get the money from?

“Let’s go in. Who cares about them? I don’t think that any of the other aristocratic families or those war officers would actually attend the birthday party and forgo the wedding happening on our side!”

Cecilia was so furious that her face had gone white. She stamped her foot.

“It doesn’t look like a birthday party. Look at that screen—they’re celebrating Jack and Selena’s wedding!”

Ivan pointed at the building.

At this moment, everyone’s phones buzzed.

They all took out their phones. It was actually a mass message congratulating Jack and Selena on their wedding.

“No way. If we’re getting a text like this, doesn’t that mean that the entire country has gotten the same thing?”

Old Man Taylor was completely stupefied; he wondered if he had gone blind. Every one of them received the same message. Was this a mass congratulatory message?

“No—no way. It probably got sent out to the entire Eastfield. They must have designated a specific province!”

Cecilia immediately protested.

Even if that were the case, it would have been impossible if not for some figure with considerable influence.

Chapter 842

The location of the hotel was even included at the end of the message.

“Why is Jack holding a wedding now, when he hadn’t even bothered to tell us before? Didn’t he say it was a birthday party?”

Master Roy frowned. He was just about to leave for Cecilia’s wedding when he received the unexpected message.

“What should we do, Master? If we go to Jack’s wedding, Cecilia’s wedding is still ongoing. And Cecilia and her family had specially invited us! Not only did Jack not give us a notice in advance but he’s also holding this ceremony just to make up for what he hadn’t done. It’s fine if we don’t go!”

A middle-aged man beside Master Roy drew his brows together, pondering. Then he posed the question.

Master Roy was speechless for a while as well. “Geez. Couldn’t he have chosen another date? Why did he have to hold it on the same day as Cecilia’s wedding? I wouldn’t even have thought of going if it were a birthday party since Cecilia’s wedding is more important—and since I should give face to the Taylor family. But I really don’t know what to do now!”

“Why don’t we see if the Goddess of War shows up there first? We’ll attend Jack’s wedding if the Goddess of War is there, and we’ll just send our wedding gifts over to the Gold family!”

The middle-aged man suggested to his master after considering the situation.

“What if the Gods of War don’t turn up at either of their weddings? Then we’ll just go to Cecilia’s wedding and give the gifts to Jack and his family. It’ll be fine so long as we don’t offend anybody. But essentially, we’ll go for whichever wedding that the Goddess of War attends—assuming that she shows up. It’s likely that the King of Wars and the officers will all go to the wedding that she’s attending!”

Master Roy finally made the decision after weighing his options.

“We’ll know what to do, depending on how all this plays out. Aren’t the two weddings in the same area?”

We can go to Cecilia's wedding first, and if the Goddess of War goes for Jack's wedding, it still won't be too late for us to go over. We'll just say that we want to go to their wedding as well—that we can't afford to miss either one of them. How does that sound?"

At this moment, Madam Roy suggested after she thought about it.

"We can go along with that!"

Robert nodded his head. All of them quickly set off in their cars and arrived at the square.

The two hotels were not very far from each other.

They got down from the car and entered the square first. Only then did Robert and the others notice that plenty of wealthy businessmen and third-class aristocratic families were here.

Each of them felt like they were stuck between a rock and a harder place as well. They were wondering if they should go to Jack's wedding instead. He was getting popular lately, after all. Besides, he had booked the entire hotel. They did not know if he had borrowed the money, but the sheer magnitude of his work was somewhat frightening.

Many people came over to the Roy family when they arrived.

"Master Roy, which wedding are you going to attend?"

An old man asked Robert, smiling.

It was obvious that they all wanted to know his decision.

“Has the Goddess of War made an appearance yet?”

Robert asked after he thought about it.

“Not yet!”

The old man twisted his lips into a mirthless smile. “We don’t even know if she’ll show up. We can’t just keep standing here, can we?”

Chapter 843

Robert mirrored the old man’s expression. “You’re right. It would have been fine to not show up if Jack was just celebrating a birthday, but that bastard just had to go ahead and organize a wedding instead. He probably wanted to throw a surprise for Selena. That’s why he did all this. He’s making it difficult for us!”

A man from a third-class aristocratic family interjected, “Who cares? He didn’t even bother to tell us. It’ll be fine even if we don’t go. The Gold family had sent out the invites a long time ago. It’ll be terrible if we don’t show up. I think we should just attend Young Master Gold’s wedding instead.”

Robert bobbed his head, smiling. “Yes. Let’s go to the Gold family’s wedding first. It couldn’t have been easy for Jack to book a hotel as big as that. There probably will be others who’ll attend his wedding!”

In a flash, all of them agreed to go over to the six-star hotel.

“Dad, Jack was the one who booked the seven-star hotel. He even included the location in his message. Will many people choose to not show up here? I’m a little worried. We’ve already booked a few hundred tables. If no one comes, we’ll...”

Kelly, who was currently on the top floor of the six-star hotel, was getting anxious now. After all, Jack

had booked a seven-star hotel. Never mind that he had already one-upped them, he even managed to send a blast message to everyone's phones.

"Don't worry. We sent proper invitations. That idiot did not send invites—in fact, he did not even tell anyone about it. Even if he's holding his wedding in a seven-star hotel, no one would go if it's tacky!"

Master Gold gave a wry smile, speaking confidently.

Just as he finished speaking, the elevator doors opened. Plenty of significant figures came into view.

"See? They're here already. Even the Roy family is here!"

Delight leaped to Master Gold's expression. He immediately stepped forward to welcome the guests.

At that moment, Selena had just finished her makeup. She went to the grand ballroom at the very top of the hotel. It was a large, grandiose space, and it was exquisitely decorated. It looked like a fairy-tale came alive.

"Not a single person is here, dear. Look at the other side. Looks like plenty of people are there!"

Selena cast her gaze toward the top floor of the other building, frowning. She knew that Jack had spent a lot of money on this. She did not know if he had borrowed it from Skyler or the Goddess of War, but she could not be bothered to ask.

Now, she was more worried that no one would come even after everything had been prepared. That would be extremely embarrassing.

"Don't worry, dear!"

Jack chuckled, his expression unfazed.

Yet more and more people appeared at the other building as time ticked by. Plenty of commanders and officers had even gone there.

After all, Old Man Taylor, the others, and the Gold family were a lot more reputable than Jack.

Additionally, Cecilia, Kelly, and the others had sneakily taken plenty of photos and sent them to their social media groups. The photos had been quickly distributed, and plenty of influential people soon knew about the hubbub that was going on there—and they knew that Master Roy and the others were there, so to the six-star hotel they went.

Finally, at the square, Skyler—with a slight grin on his face—went straight for the hotel Jack was in, plenty of officers and Kings of War in tow.

They were subsequently displayed on the screen of the seven-star hotel. They then went straight to the top floor, meeting Jack.

“Skyler Celestino, an eight-star King of War, actually went for Jack’s wedding!”

Plenty of influential people looked over to the other side, shock jolting through their veins. Had they chosen the wrong place to be in after all?

Chapter 844

An eight-star King of War, plenty of officers, and another two two-star Kings of War all appeared on the screen of the hotel on the opposite side. The sight made plenty of businessmen waver.

“Who knew that plenty of people would show up there!”

Robert gave an awkward smile. At least, he had come here first to give his gifts and portray his blessings. It should be fine if he went over for a while.

After all, he had already done them a favor.

Still, there were quite a number of people here as well. Plenty of businessmen came over to pay their due respects.

It was obvious that a lot of people thought of coming to the Gold family's wedding first simply because Jack had not personally informed them of his wedding beforehand. They would consider the circumstances before actually deciding to go for Jack's wedding in a while.

After some time had passed, Master George, along with Sharon and the others turned up at Cecilia's wedding as well.

However, they had only paid their respects for a few minutes before Master George spoke to Master Gold, smiling, "Master Gold, why is it that Kelly's wedding so happens to be on the same day as Jack's wedding? This truly makes our life difficult. But since I've already given my gifts to you, I should go over to the other side as well. I won't feel at ease if I don't show up there at all!"

Here, Master George paused before continuing, "Don't worry though. I'll bring my butler and the others here for the feast. But you know my daughter is on very good terms with Jack, so she and a few others will just be having their meal there!"

"Sure, sure. Selena is part of the Taylor family as well, after all. We're practically one family now. Go over and give your gifts. But make sure you come back here for the good food!"

Master Gold spoke, grinning. He believed that they were just going over to nose around for a bit and they would return soon.

Soon enough, Master George and the others went over to the hotel Jack and the others were in.

However Master Gold was quickly rendered speechless as the Goddess of War, Lana Zechs, showed up.

Yet she did not come over to his side; in fact, she did not even bother to give them any gifts or pay any respects. She just went straight for Jack's hotel.

Some of the aristocratic families had originally thought about dropping off their gifts to Jack before going over to the Gold family's side for the banquet. At the sight of the Goddess of War turning up at Jack's though, they quickly ordered one or two of their subordinates to give the presents to the Gold family, while they, themselves remained on Jack's side of the hotel.

More and more people were turning up on Jack's side, and the atmosphere grew livelier. Many superstars were here as well, and they performed a few songs on the stage, singing about their well wishes for the happy couple.

In contrast, although the Gold family had hired a few stars as well, they were all B-list celebrities—small fry compared to the ones on Jack's side. The most embarrassing part was that no one was there, except for themselves, the Taylor family, and a few other businessmen and aristocratic families.

“Dad. This—this...”

Cecilia looked at her father, so furious that she could spew blood. This was supposed to be the day where Selena would embarrass herself whereas she would be standing in the limelight!

She never thought that everything would turn out this way. They had already prepared meals for so many tables. If no one came over for the banquet in a while...

Cecilia's father's expression was stormy. He shot a glare at her. "We can't blame anyone even if no one turns up, right?" he said. "They had originally said that they would throw a birthday party on this date. And yet you had to have your wedding on the same day. Who's to blame here!"

Cecilia winced. "I never thought that the Goddess of War would actually go over to their side—as well as Skyler Celestino and a few other bigshots. All those businessmen and aristocratic families are so unreliable. They just go wherever the Goddess of War goes!"

Chapter 845

"Don't worry, Cecilia. We'll have a spectacle to witness later!"

Ivan and Xena exchanged a glance before the former told Cecilia.

"What spectacle? Aren't I the spectacle now?"

Cecilia was on the brink of tears.

"Come over here!"

Ivan grinned and tugged Cecilia over to the side. Then he divulged how Jack had been poisoned.

"Really? So you're saying that Jack is going to drop dead later, just like that?"

Cecilia immediately felt better when she heard that. Even if she embarrassed herself today, she would be happy once Jack dies. She would forget all her grudges and anger then.

"Of course. I even checked on him a few days before. He already had some symptoms then. He said that he had a headache and that he was feeling fatigued. Basically, he wasn't feeling well. Look at him

laughing on the other side now, chatting with the Goddess of War. But the poison will work its magic anytime soon. His death will come in a matter of one or two minutes!”

Ivan spoke confidently, smiling. He continued after thinking for a while, “But Jack’s symptoms are kind of strange though. Some parts of his body should have been rotting by now, and he shouldn’t even be able to stand up. It’s probably because he has such a strong body!”

“Hmph. He deserves it. Who knows where he got the money to book an entire seven-star hotel? He just embarrassed me to no end. He deserves to die!”

Cecilia looked at the screen on the opposite hotel. “Judging from how he’s laughing along with the Goddess of War, he probably borrowed the money from her. Only someone like that would have that much cash to lend out. And she doesn’t have to invest in any businesses. So money isn’t all that important to someone like her!”

“That’s probably the case. Jack had saved her, after all. They really seem to be on good terms. I really admire how he’s practically sitting on her lap!”

Ivan was overwhelmed with emotion. “But he’s meeting his end today. Their wedding will turn into his funeral!”

“Hmph! Which part of the event sends ripples throughout the entire city? He just booked a single hotel. He simply managed to get a hundred Rolls-Royces for his car fleet. This is nothing compared to what they had promised!”

Cecilia snorted coldly. She spoke in a sour tone, seeing as how only a few people were present at her wedding.

“Eh. Why does that person look so familiar? I think I’ve seen him on TV!”

At this moment, an old man with a few other people in tow went before Jack and the others to give his blessings. The image of this group was quickly captured and projected on the hotel's screen.

"That—that's the boss of Daxia Juwel! My God. He's a disgustingly rich businessman. Probably one of the richest in the entire country. Shouldn't someone like that be in Gin City? Why's he in Eastfield?"

Cecilia quickly recognized the man. She released a loud exclamation.

"We meet again, my boy!"

The old man laughed as he walked over, clasping Jack's hand and shaking it. "I didn't know what to give, so I only brought over a few rings. They're not too expensive—probably worth three hundred million dollars in total!" No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 846-850

Chapter 846

"Isn't, isn't he the owner of the Daxia Juwel? He is a filthy rich businessman over in Gin City! And now he is here in our humble city!"

Someone in the crowd quickly recognized the elder in front of him, after all, he was a big shot who often appeared on TV.

"Congratulations!"

Manager Lynch was here. She flashed Jack an awkward smile and then switched her attention toward Selena. "What a beautiful bride!" she exclaimed with a hint of envy in her tone.

The moment she saw Selena with her own eyes, she finally realized why Jack did not budge in the slightest at her flirt. Selena was well known for her beauty—Beauty Queen of Eastfield. Besides, her

make-up and outfit were done by a team of professional make-up artists and fashionistas, and with a stunning wedding dress on her, she looked even more attractive.

“Thank you all for coming to my wedding. Honestly, I’m a bit flattered!”

A faint yet shy smile hung on Jack’s face as he put a few exquisite and sparkling rings on Selena’s slender fingers.

“Do I have to wear so many rings? Look, I have it here...”

Selena’s cheeks were kissed pink as though the makeup artist had painted a pink cotton candy blush on.

“Don’t worry! We have to show off our wealth, right?”

Jack laughed wholeheartedly but his forehead frowned in the next second. “Hmmm...This one is too big on you!”

After dropping his last word, he tossed the ring to Joan casually and said, “Mom, this is for you!”

“Oh my goodness! Can you be a little more careful? This is so valuable! What if you break it?”

Joan’s heart lurched at Jack’s behavior. Jack bought three rings for three hundred million, which meant one ring was around one hundred million. How could Jack just toss it as though it was a plastic ring from a toy shop!

Fortunately, she caught the ring, otherwise, it would have been a big loss if it was broken.

“Oh my, please be more careful, will you? I’m nearly scared to death!”

Fiona was frightened by Jack’s casual toss as well, that a sheen of cold and shiny sweat appeared on her forehead. Although the ring was given to Joan, they were family, and it would be a pity if the ring were broken because of the toss.

“Ha-ha!”

The owner of Daxia Jewel chuckled out loud.

Businessmen and prominent families from all over Eastfield appeared at Jack’s wedding slowly, and many people were sent over by their heads of halls to attend Jack’s wedding.

On the opposite side, inside the six-star hotel, a young man from the Taylor family approached the Old Master Taylor and suggested, “Old Master Taylor, Selena is your granddaughter too, shouldn’t we at least pay a visit? Today is Cecilia and Selena’s wedding, if we only attend Cecilia’s but not hers, it would not look great, right?”

Old Master Taylor had wanted to go over since a moment ago. He could not help but frown, “Don’t you think it’s humiliating for us to go over in such a situation? I announced before that I might not go to their party, and now if I go there, I’ll be eating my own words! How embarrassing! Besides, there will be no one left at Cecilia’s wedding if we leave!”

The middle-aged man opened his mouth, wanted to chime in, but shut up in the end. He knew Old Master Taylor very well, he would not do something that would humiliate himself. But even when the God of War was at Jack’s wedding and those wealthy businessmen from Gin city. How could Old Master Taylor still refuse to go over because of his own image and reputation? Was he not finding pain for himself?

“Guys, look! There, there is a helicopter!”

Soon, someone in the crowd pointed out a helicopter hovering toward the direction of the seven-star hotel, slowly approaching the sightseeing platform of the hotel.

“Wait, the helicopter is flying lower and lower, will it crash into the building? There is no helipad on the top of the building!

Ken Clark was dumbfounded. He was here with Neil Hugo to give Jack and Selena a gift, pretending to be friendly, but in fact, they were here to witness Jack’s last day on earth.

However, after the long wait, the death did not come as they had expected, instead, the helicopter appeared.

“Here he is!”

Lana showed a big bright smile—she was truly elated.

There was no helipad on this building for this monstrous flying machine, and the distance between it and the sightseeing platform was estimated to be around one hundred meters. At this time, a man hopped and jumped down from the helicopter.

“What the f*ck? Is this guy committing suicide?”

The crowd looked at the sight before them, some were shocked that they gulped loudly.

“Oh, my freaking goodness. Death on a celebratory occasion, what bad luck!”

Chapter 847

Another person was nearly frightened to death when the man jumped down from the helicopter. The

man attempting the jump was aiming to land on the sightseeing platform that was on top of the building.

The platform was not spacious, perhaps it could only fit up to twenty persons. Yet, this man chose to land here, how accurate would his jump be?

The sound was slight and insignificant. The man who jumped down from the helicopter, squatted after landing on the platform and then slowly stood up. A wicked smile appeared on the corner of the man.

The person in charge of filming and recording ran over and took a look at the man. His jaw dropped and his mouth wide opened, surprise filled up his eyes.

“Joseph Smith, the God of War!”

After a few moments of silence circling in the crowd, an old man suddenly yelled in excitement and called out the man’s name.

Joseph showed a faint smile and approached Jack relaxingly. “Hey, Jack! It’s been a long time!”

He paused for seconds as his attention was caught by a presence beside Jack. It was Selena. “Is this the Bride? How stunning is she!” Joseph looked at Selena and praised.

“Nice...nice to meet you, God of War!”

Selena was puzzled and somewhat flattered. Did a God of War actually come to her wedding? It was reasonable for Lana, the Goddess of War to come, after all, Jack had saved her life and his relationship with her had always been good. Besides, Lana stayed in Eastfield as well.

But, Joseph Smith, here, at her wedding? Was he not from the other city? Why was he here?

Moreover, he came in a private helicopter!

After Joseph landed on the platform, the helicopter wheeled and hovered toward the helipad outside the city. That was the only helipad near the city.

“You’re right! It’s been a long time!”

Jack nodded in satisfaction as he studied this disciple of his. Then he gently patted him on the shoulder with his hand.

“Phew! Joseph, I see you’ve grown handsome!”

Lana approached the group and teased Joseph with a smile on her face.

“You’re beautiful too, haha!”

Joseph smiled brightly in return. He pondered for a moment then took out a bank card from his pocket. “Sigh! I was in rush and I have no idea what to get you. So, money is the most practical gift I can offer!”

He stuffed the bank card onto Selena’s hands in the next second. “Mrs. White, congratulations on your big day! This is a humble gift from the bottom of my heart. It’s not much, only one billion. And the password is six zeros, you can reset it later!”

“One...one billion!”

Awkward silence suddenly struck the crowd. One billion was not much? It was way too much! This gift was beyond everything!

Although the God of War was said to have received a retirement bonus of several hundred billion but was this not too much?

This only showed that Jack had a good relationship with Joseph.

“Joseph Smith, the God of War!”

On the other side, inside the six-star hotel across the street, the head of the Gold family, as well as the Old Master Taylor and the rest, were dumbfounded. They thought someone jumped off the helicopter to commit suicide, but in the end, it turned out to be Joseph Smith, the God of War. Though his entrance was somewhat a little peculiar.

“What the h*ll! What the f*ck is this!”

Theodore’s mouth was extensively widened as if it could fit a cow. He rubbed his eyes a few times, only then did he realize that the man was really Joseph Smith, the God of War.

“Ahem, Master Gold, hear me out. Look, Selena is also my granddaughter and I haven’t gone over to give her my blessing. Today is her big day too, as her grandfather, I must go over and give my blessing!”

Old Master Taylor no longer cared about his image and reputation. If he were to attend Selena’s wedding, he would gain more reputation than what he would lose. It would be his lifetime honor to be able to have a conversation with the God of War, why was he still at Cecelia’s wedding?

“Go on, go ahead!”

Although Master Gold was upset and he could feel the anger stirring within him that his face went unsightly, he had to tamp down his irritation and gestured to the Old Master Taylor to take his leave.

Chapter 848

When Old Master Taylor arrived at the entrance of the seven-star hotel, to his surprise, he felt excitement bouncing within him. Two Gods of War came over to Jack's wedding, how dignified Jack was!

Nevertheless, he soon furrowed and muttered in confusion, "Wait, this is strange. How did the Gods of War find out that Jack's wedding was today? It was a short notice, after all. Even if the text messages have gone out to everyone, it's impossible for them to come straight after receiving the text, right? I'm afraid that Jack is not some assistant commander, otherwise, how could the Gods of War come for him?"

Ivan, on the other hand, refused to believe that Jack was some kind of King of War or some other big shot. He laughed sarcastically and said, "Hmph! Grandpa Taylor, surely this whatsoever God of War came here not for Jack but for Lana. Grandpa, think about it, I heard that Joseph is still single and Lana is so attractive and has a good body figure. So, I'm sure that he is here for Lana rather than Jack!"

Theodore, beside them, immediately chimed in, "Ivan's analysis has a point. Jack, although he has been a soldier for five years and saved Lana before, Joseph probably does not even know of Jack's existence. So, how can he come here for Jack? I guess he used Jack's wedding as an excuse to meet Lana. Besides, where Joseph is staying is not far from Eastfield!"

Ivan bobbed his head to echo. "Dad is right! And maybe Lana informed him about the wedding, so that's why..."

Old Master Taylor, however, shook his head. "Didn't you see Joseph taking out a bank card and handed it over to Selena? And I think there must be a lot of money in it, otherwise, there is no need to give a bank card specifically!"

"That I do not know. Around ten million or one to two hundred million, I guess? After all, he is a God of War, he can't be too stingy with his gift, right?"

Ivan commented after giving the matter some thoughts.

After all, sending a hundred thousand worth of gifts was not uncommon among some filthy rich businessmen. Some prominent families would even give more.

And for a man with such high status like the God of War, it was estimated to be not less than a hundred thousand.

The Taylor family entered the elevator and came up to the rooftop.

When they came out of the elevator, Old Master Taylor was nothing but full of smiles and wrinkles at the corners of his eyes. The decoration here was obviously better than Cecilia's, and the venue was at least twice as spacious. The singers that Jack hired were not of B-list but A-list and even beyond. The overall status and atmosphere was so different compared to Cecilia's, so Old Master Taylor naturally felt happier here.

"Hey, Old Master Taylor, why are you late? I was looking for you just now, and I wondered why were you not here yet."

A marshal approached the Taylors with a wide grin on his face when he spotted them.

Old Master Taylor—Zeus Taylor—smiled awkwardly and explained, "Both of my lovely granddaughters are having their big day today! Cecilia is my granddaughter as well, so it won't be great if I didn't go over and give her my blessing, right? I went there and stayed there for a short while before I rushed over, it's fine!"

Zeus, after finishing saying his last sentence, came up to Selena smilingly and handed her a gift.

However, to everyone's surprise, after giving out an archaic jade of the Taylor family to Selena, he did not stop there, "Selena, you're now jobless. And I plan to let you come back to help with Taylor's

company. I plan to open another new company and let you be in charge of it!”

“Grandpa...”

Selena was moved at his words. It looked like Old Man Taylor did not really despise her, and she was still in his heart. After all, her business-managing ability was indeed ten times stronger than Ivan’s.

“It’s set now! And you can’t refuse this time. It’s time we let bygones be bygones, alright? You’re still my favorite granddaughter!”

Old Master Taylor held her hand firmly and said with immense emotion, “The suffering times have passed, Selena.”

“Grandpa, today is my big day, it’s supposed to be all smiles and laughter. Let’s not talk about these!”

Jack smiled faintly. In his heart, he knew very well that the change in Old Master Taylor’s attitude toward Selena was nothing but because of the fame and reputation.

Chapter 849

Now that the owner of Daxia Jewel was here at Jack’s wedding, coupled with the arrival of Joseph and Lana, the two Gods of War, this kind of spectacle was absolutely rare. Imagine the fame and reputation that they would bring to the Taylor family in the future, if the Taylors announce the establishment of a new company and the person in charge was Selena, this company would certainly have a bright future.

“The Drake family is here!”

A man from the scene exclaimed aloud. At this point in time, he was not expecting James from the Drake family to come.

After all, Jack beat Timothy up not long ago, hence the possibility of James coming to Jack's wedding was near to zero.

But, now that James, Tanya, and the other Drakes attended his wedding. All of them were wearing sunny and lovely smiles on their faces.

In reality, earlier this morning, James was hesitating whether to attend the wedding. After all, Jack had beaten Timothy up, thus, if he came, it would be ignominy and humiliation to him. He did not feel good about that.

However, at the same time, he was pondering whether any God of war would attend Jack's wedding. In the birthday party last time in Taylor's residence, he had established some social network with God of war and some Kings of War and left them his contact information. This was a huge gain for him too. So if he did not come over and give Jack his blessing, would it not prove that he was petty and wanted to cut ties with Jack?

After thinking hard about it for a long time, he finally decided to send someone to attend the wedding first, to scout around. Only after he knew that Lana was there, he immediately got ready and brought the other Drakes here.

To his surprise, not only he managed to meet Lana this time, but also the man beside Lana—Joseph Smith, another God of War.

Within him, he was overwhelmed with shock, at the same time panicking. He never saw that coming, that Joseph Smith was here. Was he here for Jack's wedding as well?

"It's my honor to meet you, Mr. Smith, the God of War!"

James stepped forward and immediately gave Joseph a palm-fist salute. He was shocked down to the soles of his shoes that his little heart could barely calm down.

“Great to meet you, Sir!”

The other Drakes were startled and slowly when they found their senses, they quickly bowed and greeted Joseph.

“Oh, don’t have to be so formal. Chill! I’m here today to attend Jack’s wedding and to meet his lovely wife. So, everyone just let loose and have tons of drinks and good food later!”

Joseph chortled elatedly.

When people in Eastfield knew that another God of War had come to Jack’s wedding, many people who did not have any relationship with the Taylor family had also rushed over to send gifts and blessings. The crowd was growing bigger and bigger.

Now, the place was lively and merry.

On the other side, on top of the six-star hotel across the street, Cecelia smoldered with resentment that colors were drained out of her face. Her eyes fixated at the rooftop of the other hotel, and huffed bitterly, “James Drake, that jerk! He is just so shameless, isn’t he? Although Timothy is only lightly wounded, Jack was still the one who beat him up, how could James forget this so quickly? How could he be there and not be here!”

The head of the Gold family was smoking a cigarette on the side, his face turned unsightly as well. He had spent so much time and energy to prepare such a magnificent wedding for his son.

He could not imagine that nobody came to Cecilia’s wedding. Even those who came, only stayed for a while, left their presents, and then went over to Jack’s wedding. Some of them sent their people over to give the presents and none of them had stayed. Everyone went over to see the hustle and bustle happening at Jack’s wedding. He was rendered speechless at the scene.

“This is a total humiliation to the Gold family!”

In the end, the head of the Gold family could not do anything but sighed.

Chapter 850

The more Kelly Gold thought about it, the more the anger flooded his veins. He shot Cecelia a deadly glare and barked, “Cecelia, is your brain filled with grass or what? Why do you have to have a wedding on the same day as Selena? If we were two days earlier or later, it won’t be this terrible. Now look, I can actually hear a pin drop!”

Cecelia was tongue-tied, at the same time, she was burning with rage. She did not expect Kelly to shove all the blame onto her.

She returned the glare to Kelly, an exasperated one, and started complaining, “Kelly Gold, how could you blame me on this? You’re part of it as well, do you remember? You are responsible for this too! When I mentioned my plan to you, you agreed to it! Why didn’t you oppose it back then?”

“All right, all right, stop arguing!”

The head of the Gold family stepped forward and stopped the fight. He felt a flash of irritation at their argument. “Today is your wedding day, if you argue, you’ll become even more like a joke! Do you want to be that?”

“Huh, look, look over there! Why is there another helicopter coming?”

Cecelia immediately noticed something strange and pointed in the direction.

“Yeah, you’re right. There’s another helicopter. Don’t tell me it’s here for Jack’s wedding again!”

Kelly was stunned at the view, then he commented with a bitter smile on his face.

“How is that possible? It’s impossible!”

The head of the Gold family said.

Nonetheless, they all went quiet the next moment when they found out that the helicopter was heading toward the top of the seven-star hotel. It hovered above the building and then lowered down to get near to the sightseeing platform.

“Ay, dios mio! Another helicopter, another one!”

The manager of the hotel quickly contacted his boss for him come over quickly. After all, two Gods of War were already here. Today, this scene was definitely enough to shake Eastfield.

She was standing outside the hotel and lifted her head to look at the big screen that was hanging on the wall of the building.

Soon, another man jumped from the helicopter, where the distance between the platform and the huge flying machine was estimated to be one to two hundred meters. He landed steadily on the platform.

The man—who was on bent knees after landing on the platform—had slowly stood up. The camera captured the man’s face clearly.

This man, who had caused another commotion, was actually Fernando Campbell, another God of War!

“Oh My God! I’m gonna faint soon. It’s Fernando Campbell!”

The manager of the hotel shouted in a direction, “Boss, come here! Quickly come here! From now on, our hotel is really going to be famous. Another God of War has come! Sh*t! I really didn’t expect that! Who the hell is Jack? Why on earth are these Gods of War here for him?”

“Alright, good! Three Gods of War are here. We must give them a huge discount for the hotel and the banquet. In fact, they’re doing us a bigger favor by being here. We now have a slogan for our next advertisement for the hotel. Just imagine, ‘Gods of War in The Seven’, doesn’t this sound great? With advertisements like this, our hotel will be beaming in no time!”

The owner of the hotel exclaimed excitedly; his voice was trembling.

“Fernando Campbell, the God of War!”

When James and the others had finally registered into their brains the fact that Fernando was here. They let out a long breath with a hint of shock and surprise. Fernando Campbell was another powerful God of War, and his combat prowess could definitely be considered as first or second among the nine Gods of War.

Nobody had expected to see such a marvelous figure here at Jack’s wedding.

“My pleasure to meet you, dear God of War!” No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 851-855

Chapter 851

One of the people instinctively raised his hands to form a gesture of salute.

“It’s our honor to meet you, God of War!”

Everyone followed suit, and Jack had no choice but to return the salute as well as his voice blended into

theirs.

“Please, you flatter me!”

Fernando chuckled and walked over.

A seven-star King of War could barely hold his curiosity, thus he turned to ask Joseph, “Sir Smith, why did you choose to Jack and Selena’s wedding banquet? Did you two know each other before?”

Everyone turned their heads when they heard that very question. They were curious as to why Joseph Smith attended the banquet as well.

Joseph gave a wan smile. Fortunately, Lana had told them to think of a good excuse before they came so that they would be prepared should they be asked such questions. Joseph smiled and said, “I had a near-death experience not long after I was deployed on the battlefield, but Jack, with all his proficient medical knowledge, saved me. He’s practically my savior, thus it’s only right that I attend his banquet!”

Jack was dumbfounded when he heard Joseph’s reply. He had told them to not reveal his identity, but he never thought that Joseph would come up with an excuse like that. He did not know what to feel about his made-up story.

After all, Lana had used this story once before.

The expressions of James and the others shifted when they heard Joseph’s story. Who knew that Jack had saved not just one, but two Gods of War?

“What about you, Sir Campbell?” asked the seven-star King of War with a grin on his face.

Fernando did not know how to reply to that; he did not put much thought into his ‘excuse’. He had

thought of using the same story Joseph gave out, but Joseph used it as his own. With how sudden he was asked that question, Fernando could not find a better answer in such a short time, and if he took too long, it would induce suspicion.

The cogs in his brain spun as he tried to come up with a plausible excuse, yet he found not a single good story to reply to the question asked. In the end, he could only offer an awkward smile. "It's the same as Joseph's, actually. I was injured like him and I almost lost my life too, but Jack saved both our lives!"

Joseph smiled stiffly and chimed in, "That's right, that's exactly what happened!"

Many of the attendees could not help themselves as they sneakily fished out their phones to take photos. The sight of three Gods of War in the venue was sensational news; they wanted to gloat to their friends and family about it.

Lana stepped forward and changed the topic, "Where's your wife, Fernando? Didn't you say that you were going to bring your wives and your daughter along? Why are you here alone?"

"They should be here anytime soon. They're actually taking the cab," Fernando replied, smiling. "I had them get off of the helicopter at the city gates, and I'm here first because I couldn't wait to see all of you. There were no hangars around here, so I just jumped off!"

"I skydived here as well. Great minds think alike!"

Joseph laughed.

"You're right, Gods of War. We never thought about this before. Don't worry, we'll inform our boss about this and we'll quickly improve our facilities. We'll remove part of the roof there to build a hangar!"

With a large grin, the hotel manager immediately stepped forward and spoke, "It's such an honor for us

to host so many Gods of War!”

Meanwhile...

“F*ck.” Neil and Ken dragged Ivan into a corner and frantically asked, “Why isn’t Jack dead yet? He still looks like he’s in fine spirits! Are you sure about this, Ivan? Why isn’t he dead yet?”

They grew impatient.

Chapter 852

Both Ken and Neil took part in the banquet Jack hosted just to see him dead. They wanted to see him flat on the floor as his body succumbed to the poison.

More importantly, they wanted to see the shock and horror on everyone’s faces. They wanted to see him die before Selena and how her face would morph into one with immeasurable agony.

Still, nothing they expected had happened as they watched as the Gods of War trailed in, one after another, and bolstered Jack and Selena’s reputation to no end. It was plain to see how everyone admired them.

“I’m sure of it, and we saw it for ourselves! A few days ago, Jack was complaining about how he was feeling unwell. Xena was there, too!”

Ivan frowned. “Let’s wait for a bit. This is the final day, after all. It’s possible that Jack has a body strong enough to resist the poison for a bit, so the symptoms are probably suppressed. Maybe the symptoms will just pile on him abruptly, and he’ll explode into pieces. That’s possible!”

“That’s right. I can verify that information since I did follow Ivan that day. Jack did tell us that he wasn’t feeling well!”

Xena nodded. "I think it's about time! Either that, or the poison that you two obtained is fake!"

"What are you talking about? There's no way it's fake!"

Ken immediately huffed. "Just wait for it, I'm sure it won't be long. That little punk will die soon enough!"

"Oh, the thought of it makes me so excited. Selena will surely have a meltdown by then!" Neil emitted a mirthless chuckle.

Back at the banquet, Fernando took out a credit card and thrust it toward Selena. "Right. I didn't buy any gifts, but I do have this credit card. I'm giving it to you, Miss Selena. There's one billion inside, and it doesn't have a personal identification number!"

"That's too much!"

The overwhelmed Selena did not know what to feel as she turned to look at Jack. It was too much. Joseph had given her one, and Fernando was giving her another.

"Just take it as their blessing!"

The grinning Jack nodded his head reassuringly, and only then did Selena take the credit card.

"These Gods of War are being too generous, aren't they? They're giving out one billion just like that!" blurted Ivan.

"Joseph had also given one billion. Hmm... They've probably discussed this earlier. It wouldn't look good

if one of them gave less than the other.”

Neil flashed a bitter smile.

“Joseph gave that much too?”

Ivan’s expression contorted when he heard that. He thought that Jack would have trouble settling the bills, what with the money he needed to spend to book the entire hotel and organize a wedding banquet.

Who knew that the Gods of War would give him so much money. It was definitely enough to cover the costs, and they would still have plenty left. Jack was earning big dollars!

Concurrently...

...

In a third-class aristocratic family’s residence, the Turner family’s master, Fabian asserted, “Let’s go. We have to go!”

“Dad, it’ll be so embarrassing if we go. We caused such a big issue out of the billiards game with Jack that one time!” countered Leo, his brows furrowed as he did.

Chapter 853

“Don’t be an idiot! Just look at the attendees of the wedding banquet. Three Gods of War have already shown up, a billionaire businessman from the Gin City is attending, and there are so many top-tier celebrities. It’s mayhem! What if Jack gets angry because we don’t go?”

Fabian then continued, headstrong in his stance, “Besides, we gave the money we lost to the kid, right? There shouldn’t be much of a grudge between us now. If we go, we’ll be able to make connections with aristocratic families, war officers, and the likes. We might even become good friends with the Gods of War!”

“Fine. Let’s go.” Leo eventually relented as he nodded, and with that, they made preparations to go to the seven-star hotel.

“We have to go. Fernando Campbell is my idol!”

Quite a few run-off-the-mill businessmen who had thought of attending decided to not attend the banquet, as it was embarrassing to not come up with proper gifts. After all, they should give anything that was worth less than 80,000 dollars at a place like that.

However, they suddenly decided to go when they saw the Gods of War. It would be amazing enough if they managed to get a God of War like Fernando into the background of a selfie.

More and more people came to attend the banquet, and Jack fortunately prepared everything beforehand. Moreover, there were a few private rooms and tables ready on the floors below them. Otherwise, there probably would not be enough places to sit.

Meanwhile, on the top floor of the six-star hotel opposite them...

“H—He literally stirred the city, alright...!” Cecilia’s lips contorted into a small, bitter smile. She had lost—and terribly, at that. She did not know why those Gods of War attended Jack’s banquet, but her loss was indisputable.

Cecilia did not want to admit that, but there was no way around it.

Just as she felt absolutely hopeless, two helicopters appeared above her.

“Don’t tell me that more Gods of War are coming?!”

James looked at the distance, shocked at the sight of two more helicopters that came from different directions. He could sense his breaths turned uneven and ragged.

One of the helicopters arrived and a man jumped down from it. The man smiled faintly before he entered the hotel.

The man feared that everyone would question why he would attend the banquet, thus he took the initiative and greeted Jack smilingly, “Mr. Jack, thank you for saving my life. Your medical skills are unparalleled. I just had to come to your banquet to share a few drinks with you!”

Jack was dumbfounded at the man’s greeting, and all he could do was offer an awkward smile.

Lana, Fernando, and Joseph—who stood by the side—were just as shocked. They never thought that Abner would use the same story. That was too...

It was fine if one or two of them used the same story, but... Three? Four? That was too much.

Lana had told them beforehand to prepare their own replies and stories, but they never did discuss the stories they wanted to use, and they all thought of the same thing.

However, they did discuss the matter of the banquet gift, and they collectively decided that they would each give a billion dollars.

Abner quickly fished out a credit card and handed it to Selena. “Miss Selena, there’s one billion in here. Just take it as a token of my blessing and as thanks to your husband for saving my life. You have to take it. The password is six zeros, but you can change it whenever you like!”

“T–Thank you, Sir Young!”

Selena felt touched, and she did not know what else to say. Lana had also given her a billion just moments ago, and she had amassed gifts worth four billion dollars. Would she get rich with just this banquet?

“Ah...! I—I feel dizzy!”

Fiona—who was not too far away—was utterly shocked. They earned so much in just this banquet! She pinched her thigh tightly. “I... I’m not dreaming!”

Chapter 854

Fiona felt like everything was a dream. After all, four Gods of War attended her daughter’s banquet and gave both Jack and her their blessings.

It was only then Fiona knew Jack’s claim that he would stir the city was no empty promise; he delivered that promise. They were handed a ridiculously lucky hand, and the presence of the four Gods of War far surpassed what anyone could imagine.

Thump!

Amid her excitement, a loud noise was heard from above them. The other helicopter flew toward them, and another man leaped down from it.

“It’s... It’s William Nash, a God of War!” a young woman called out, and the crowd was shocked once more. Yet another God of War showed up to the banquet.

“My goodness...! It’s true!”

James was stupefied.

“Sir Nash, why are you here?” Queenie excitedly walked toward him, her eyes fixated on him. The God of War had a regal aura to him.

William gave a wan smile; he had already prepared his story. “During the days before I was an accomplished person, I was injured during a skirmish and nearly died with the wound. Fortunately, Mr. Jack was so skilled that he saved me, so that’s why I...”

It was only then when William noticed the odd gazes directed at him.

He immediately frowned. “What’s wrong? Did I say something?” he asked.

Queenie offered an awkward smile. “No, n—nothing’s wrong. Jack truly is a skilled medical practitioner, and it seems like he saved many lives throughout the five years he was in the military!”

“His medical skills are astoundingly incredible!”

William laughed. He then walked toward Selena, took out a credit card worth a billion dollars, and handed it to her. “So you’re his wife. No wonder Jack kept mooning over you on the battlefield!”

Selena’s chest was filled with warmth when she heard that. “Welcome, Sir Nash. Please, take a seat!”

“It’s our honor to see you, Sir Nash!” the people bowed at him.

“Don’t worry about it!”

William chuckled before he faked his surprise. "Oh, what a coincidence," said William as though shocked to see them. "Joseph, Fernando, you're both here too!"

"That's right. Jack so happened to have saved us before too!"

Abner gave an awkward smile.

William was stunned when he heard that. No wonder everyone gave him weird looks just moments ago; everyone else gave the same story as he did!

If everyone used the same story, would anyone actually believe it?

Fernando pulled him to the side. "Why did you use the same story?" he asked in a quiet voice. "Couldn't you find some other excuse?"

William did not know what to feel about it. "I couldn't think of a good one, even after spending half the day thinking about it. It so happens that Master is a skilled medical practitioner even better than Ethan Hays, so that's why that's the only story I can think of. I thought it was the best excuse ever. It has a sliver of truth in it though, since he's so skilled in medicine!"

"We're done for! If we're thinking like this, Ethan and the rest will probably use the same excuse too!"

Fernando's expression darkened, his lips curled into a wry smile.

All of a sudden, another helicopter appeared on the horizon, as it flew in from the city gates.

Thump!

Just like before, a low thud was heard as a man appeared on the glass balcony that extended from the roof.

“It’s another God of War, Sam Johnson!”

Everyone grew even more excited when they recognized him. That added another God of War in the venue.

In truth, everyone expected it was a God of War when they saw him jumping down from such a high altitude. He actually dared to leap down from a height of 100 or 200 meters above sea level yet sustained no injuries. Only the Gods of War could accomplish such a feat.

“Sir Johnson, you’re here too! You look so handsome!”

“Oh, yes! Coming here was worth every second of my time. There are already six Gods of War here. My god, I’m going nuts!”

“I’ve never seen so many Gods of War in all the years I’ve served on the battlefield. I’ve only ever seen one, yet here they are, six of them!”

The marshals, commanders, and the likes were all excited. The sight that greeted them shook them to the very core.

“My goodness. Another one!”

At the same time, on the top floor of the six-star hotel opposite them, Cecilia and members of the Gold family watched on with sour expressions. They saw another God of War appearing on the opposite

hotel's screen, and it was a grand sight to see.

"six of them came to the banquet. Perhaps all nine will show up?" Kelly chuckled. He felt that he had become the joke of the entire universe.

"No way. How can that happen?"

Master Gold shook his head, convinced that he was dreaming.

"Miss Selena, I almost died once on the battlefield, but Sir Jack was luckily skilled in medicine..."

Sam went straight to Selena and conveyed his story, and he did not notice the desperate hints that Lana and the others were giving.

When they heard that explanation, James and the others were utterly speechless. Just how many Gods of War had Jack saved?

Even Selena was at a loss for words; that excuse sounded more like a lie at that point. Was Jack a specialist? Why did so many of the people he saved on the battlefield turned out to be Gods of War, when there were plenty of other soldiers?

Nonetheless, Selena did not want to wear herself out thinking about it. She just smiled and took the credit card worth one billion from him.

It seemed that all those Gods of War were tycoons, and they had discussed beforehand to give one billion dollars each. Still, they were too generous.

The beautiful manager from Daxia Jewel admired Selena for being able to marry a man like Jack; she had enough happiness just from the banquet to fill her for a lifetime. She was probably the happiest woman

in the entire world on this day.

Sam went to join Fernando and the others after he gifted Selena the credit card.

He felt like shriveling when he found out that the excuse he gave was the exact same story that the others had supplied.

Still, Sam had no choice. It would be way too suspicious if he claimed that Jack's fighting prowess far surpassed his. It so happened that Jack was skilled in medicine, and that was why the story of Jack saving him was flawless.

Despite that, he never anticipated that his comrades shared the same train of thought on their excuse.

"Ethan won't use this excuse, right?"

Lana thought about it before she said, "After all, Ethan's such a skilled doctor, and everybody acknowledges him as a miracle doctor. Ethan probably won't convince anyone if he uses that excuse."

Everyone nodded at Lana's speculation. It would be preposterous if the nine Gods of War used the exact same excuse, and no one would believe them.

No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 856-860

Chapter 856

Just as they were talking, two more helicopters appeared in the distance as it slowly flew toward the hotel.

A smile managed to creep its way onto Selena's face. "Don't tell me that the other three Gods of War

are coming too?" she whispered to Jack. "With the arrival of those two, we'll only be missing one more!"

Jack nodded. "They don't have much of a choice. They need to come see you, at least. How could they not come to my wedding? I'd give them a good one-two if they don't!"

Selena rolled her eyes at Jack, though her happiness was evident. "You really took this to another level, didn't you? I'm practically trembling in anticipation now, and the gifts we've received today will be enough to cover the costs of the hotel. Even with all that, we'll have plenty left!"

Selena's smile slowly dropped as a thought occurred to her. "We'll have to return the gesture when they get married," said Selena, "and we'll have to give plenty of money then!"

Jack did not know whether to laugh or cry when he heard that. "Don't worry, Honey. They've married long ago. Look there: Fernando's two wives and his son are here!" said Jack as he pointed at the elevator.

Fernando's family had indeed taken a cab over.

"Oh... That's great!"

Selena gave a bitter smile. "I'm so nervous. There are so many Gods of War here. Am I dreaming?"

"No, you're not."

Jack smiled, and within the span of ten seconds, the two Gods of War leaped down from their helicopters.

"It's our honor, Sir Riley Blackwell!"

“It’s our honor, Sir Adam McCarthy!”

Everyone cried out in excitement when they saw the two Gods of War.

“It’s insane! Another two Gods of War are here!”

One of the attendees whipped out his phone and took photos. The banquet was sensational, and these photos would be enough ammunition to gloat.

Plenty of businessmen were even more excited by then. Jack did not place any restrictions on his guests, so anyone could walk in. This really made them feel elated.

“Oh my, so many people are here already. Seems like Lana and the rest arrived long ago!”

Riley chuckled as he scanned his surroundings.

“You’re right. Looks like only Ethan isn’t here yet. Everyone else is here, though!”

Adam chuckled as well. The two of them went over to greet Jack.

“Happy birthday to you, Miss Selena, and congratulations on yours and Jack’s wedding!” the two spoke simultaneously, and they each presented a credit card worth one billion to Selena.

Selena was truly convinced that all nine Gods of War would attend their banquet with how things looked.

It was then a thought chimed in Selena’s mind, and her brows furrowed instinctively. “How did you two

know Jack?”

Jack had told her once that the nine Gods of War were his disciples, but Selena never thought much about it as she assumed Jack was just lying.

Yet, with the sight of all the Gods of War—that came from all parts of the country—in their banquet, Selena could not help the thought... Was Jack truly their master?

“Oh, I had been injured on the battlefield once...”

“Jack had saved my life once, so...”

The two Gods of War replied at the same time, but their voices trailed off when they heard the other’s words. They both had the exact same train of thought.

Selena was flabbergasted. The first God of War gave that same excuse, yet so did the second. At that point, all eight Gods of War had the same story, and the last one would probably give the same excuse too.

“Jack truly is something else!”

Selena’s lips curled into a mirthless smile. She then said to them, “The journey must’ve been tiring for you two. Stay here for two more days before you leave.”

Chapter 857

“Of course! I rarely swing around these parts!”

Adam and Riley grinned before they walked to one side, away from her.

With disbelief, Riley lowly spoke under his breath, “Seriously, Adam? Why did you have to use the same story as I did?”

“I didn’t think this could happen. Why would you say something like that? I also noticed that everyone gave us strange looks... Don’t tell me that they gave the same story too? No one’s going to believe us if that’s the case!”

Adam felt lost at that moment.

“Right? We’ll draw suspicion if we all give the same story, and Master won’t be happy if his identity as the Supreme Warrior is revealed!”

At that moment, William’s voice was heard as he walked over, a small smile on his face as he did.

“The only one left is Ethan. Let’s hope he doesn’t use the same story!”

Abner flashed a bitter smile as he joined them. “Regardless, it doesn’t matter if they’re suspicious about us. They can’t just interrogate us about the matter, right? Of course, Master might not be happy about this!”

“Quiet down! Don’t let anyone hear you!” Lana quickly reminded him.

Many of the guests in the banquet sneakily took photos of them, though none of them came to disturb their conversation—probably because of their revered status. Everyone maintained a safe distance away from them.

On the other hand, at the six-star hotel opposite them...

“There are eight Gods of War now!” said Master Gold sardonically as he broke out into a chuckle.

“Seems like all nine are going to come. He’s really sending shockwaves throughout the city!”

Cecilia stared into the distance. Another helicopter appeared on the horizon. It was a no brainer that the miracle doctor, Ethan Hays would come as well.

...

“He’s here. Ethan is here. He probably won’t say that Jack saved him, right?”

James had no idea what to feel as he watched the helicopter. He did not understand why the eight Gods of War used the exact same story. Did Jack truly save all of their lives? It was too much of a coincidence like that.

It was either a coincidence or Jack just had the incredible luck to have saved soldiers who were, in fact, Gods of War. It was enough luck to make the gods jealous.

True enough, the person who was coming was Ethan.

“Greetings, Sir Ethan Hays!” greeted the guests when he arrived.

“Oh dear, I never thought that I’d be the last to arrive!”

The round-faced Ethan emanated a genial aura as he smiled.

“Sir Hays, it’s our honor to finally see you. You’re such a miracle doctor!”

“That’s right. Sir Hays, I heard that your medical skills have saved plenty of soldiers!”

“Sir Hays, don’t tell me that you have the same story as the other Gods of War. Were you saved by Jack as well?”

Voices cried out as he slowly walked toward Jack and Selena.

The corners of Ethan’s mouth twitched when he heard them. It seemed like the story he had crafted beforehand would not work.

However, he quickly came before Jack and spoke, smiling, “Sir Jack, long time no see. I heard that you’re highly skilled in medicine as well, and that you saved the lives of the other eight Gods of War. I’ve come here to humbly request that you impart your wisdom to me. I hope that I can learn plenty from you!”

Jack was speechless. Someone came up with a different story at last, but that excuse was a little too scandalizing.

“You’re too kind, Sir Hays. We should be exchanging our knowledge instead. No master-student relationship required!” replied Jack awkwardly as he grinned.

Chapter 858

The crowd held their breath for a moment when they heard what Ethan had said to Jack. Ethan Hays, the miraculous doctor who possessed incredible medical knowledge, came and asked Jack to teach him the art of medicine?

Would that not mean Jack was even more skilled than him in the medical field?

Fiona could no longer stand idly by the sidelines and went up to them. “Sir Hays, are you saying that my

son-in-law's medical skills are even better than yours? It can't be true, right? You've been called a miracle doctor, a divine doctor!" blurted Fiona.

Ethan knew that the woman before him was Jack's mother-in-law, hence he gave her a bright smile and replied, "Yes, Auntie, his medical skills are spectacular!"

Ethan paused for a moment before he added, "Just think about it: All these highly honored Gods of War had been injured in the battlefield, and not a minor one at that. It's logical that no ordinary doctor could treat them, and only a highly skilled doctor could do that. Not only highly skilled, but top-notch. Like, top-notch, if you get what I mean."

Ethan thought of something before he quickly continued, "So, with Jack's amazing skills, he had treated them. Basically, he can be considered as the Gods of War's personal doctor!"

Only then did it dawn on the crowd that Jack had such a highly honored position in the battlefield. Even if he was not some God of War or King of War, with his remarkable medical skills and his relationship with those Gods of war, it was sufficient to make him respectable.

No wonder the eight Gods of War told the same story—Jack truly had saved their lives on the battlefield. The stories were not lies; they were the truth!

"Yes, Sir Hays is right! Jack is our exclusive doctor, specialized in treating Gods of War and some eight-star and nine-star Kings of War!"

Skyler chimed in to help Jack and the others too. He smoothed the situation with a smile on his face.

"Wow...! That's really amazing! I really didn't expect that this son-in-law of mine would be so admirable, so promising!"

Fiona patted Jack's shoulder as she gushed, "Jack, why didn't you tell me this before?"

Jack was rendered speechless. Fortunately, Ethan's explanation about the whole coincidental stories was justified, and the excuses given by the eight Gods of War were covered up beautifully. Otherwise, it would be difficult for others to not think that Jack was the Supreme Warrior.

Jack smiled and faced Fiona. "Mom, it's not that I don't want to tell you about it. I'm just afraid that even if I do tell you, you won't believe me. Besides, I remember saying to you that my medical skills are better than Sir Hays'. That's what I said, but you didn't believe it. You thought I was only bragging!"

Fiona's lips curved into a sheepish smile. "Well... You can't blame me for not believing you. After all, you seldom cure people, and I thought you were just an ordinary soldier! How can I even think that you possessed such medical skills and knowledge?"

By that time, Joan recalled something, and she went toward them with a frown. "Jack, something's off. Before coming here, I remember that you told me you've purchased a necklace for Selena. Where's the necklace? Why didn't you take it out and put it on her? Her neck looks so bare and empty right now."

"That's right! Where's the necklace you bought?"

Selena rolled her stunning eyes at Jack, the corners of her mouth curling up happily. "Didn't you say you wanted to give me a surprise?"

Jack smiled warmly at Selena before he replied, "That's right, but you'll have to close your eyes. I'll put it on you!"

"Close my eyes? Why all the mystery?" Selena, internally overwhelmed with joy, closed her eyes shut.

With that, Jack quickly took out a jewelry box.

“What’s Jack doing? What kind of gift is he giving to Selena? I wonder...” muttered Ivan with a frown.

“The hell knows! Making it so mysterious, as though it’s a grand gift.”

Xena sneered coldly. “It’s just a necklace. How grand would it be? Everyone knows what kind of necklace it is, so why is he acting so extra and asked Selena to close her eyes? What’s all the mystery for? It’s not like we don’t know it’s a necklace!”

Xena was green with envy and jealousy; she never thought Jack was such a capable man.

Had she known that from the start, Xena would have used millions of ways to seduce and tempt him with her beauty. It would satisfy her enough to be his second wife.

Yet, even when she entertained that thought, the image of Sharon George came to mind. Xena glanced at Sharon who stood beside her; an incredibly beautiful, gorgeous woman was she. Xena knew she could never top that, even if she did follow through with pulling a million tricks to tempt Jack. It was futile.

Jack would certainly not like her, and it did not help that that punk was no typical playboy that drooled over pretty ladies.

Chapter 859

As Xena mulled over the matter, Jack had taken out the necklace from the box and placed it around Selena’s neck.

“What?!”

Xena could feel her blood rapidly rushing through her veins in enthusiasm and her breaths labored at the sight of the necklace. Her eyes felt like it would pop out of their sockets.

That necklace... It was the Heart of the Abyss!

Some time ago, there was a rumor that that exorbitant necklace was bought by a mysterious tycoon. Xena never thought that the mysterious buyer was Jack all along!

“The Heart of the Abyss!”

“Oh my freaking god! It’s the Heart of the Abyss!”

“So it was Jack who bought it! Oh my... Oh my! It’s hella expensive!”

Many of the ladies among the crowd—who usually used luxurious products—gasped and gushed excitedly at the necklace before them. They were obsessed with the necklace.

Selena’s eyelids flipped open at the sound of gasps and excitement from the crowd. She glanced down to look at the necklace that dangled around her neck... There was a huge ruby stone! Her eyes were flooded with tears in an instant.

“Jack... You bought it! You actually bought it! This is too much!”

At that moment, Selena felt that all the aggravation and adversity she had suffered all those years were worth it. Jack’s kindness and love for her moved her completely.

Selena did not even see Jack for five years, yet this man gave her the best of everything.

Selena’s tears rolled down her cheeks like gushing waterfalls.

“Honey, why are you crying? Today is our big day!”

Jack’s heart wrenched at the sight of Selena crying, and he gently wiped them off before saying, “Don’t get your makeup messed up. You want to look pretty on our big day, right?”

Selena let out a laugh. “No, it’s nothing. It’s just... I’m just too happy. These are happy tears! I’ve never been so happy before!”

“Mommy, you’re so beautiful!”

A pair of big, gleaming eyes beamed at Selena. It was the adorable Kylie, blinking at her mother.

“Of course! Your Mommy is the prettiest!”

Jack hoisted Kylie into his arms and gushed, “Quick, give Mommy a kiss!”

“Mwah!”

Kylie nodded giddily before she obediently stretched her neck and gave Selena a peck on her cheek.

“It’s the Heart of the Abyss!”

Xena’s eyes were transfixed on the necklace as jealousy sizzled within her. Life would be perfect if she had that necklace around her neck, but alas, such an opportunity would not come in this lifetime.

The boss of the Daxia Juwel smiled with satisfaction; he made the right choice to attend Jack and Selena’s banquet. He turned to Jack and said, “Jack, why don’t we all take a group photo together? You,

me, the Gods of War, and some first-class families.”

“Sounds good to me!”

Jack smiled and gestured to Lana and the others to join them. “Madam Zechs, let’s come over and take a photo together. Come to think of it, we haven’t taken a photo together yet!”

“Sounds great!”

Elated, Ethan and the others joined Jack to take group photos.

Chapter 860

Those who could join the group photos were only those from first-class families and people of such status, like James Drake. This made Ken, Neil, and the others envious as they were not qualified to join.

As Ivan was from the Taylor family, he could join the photograph session. Xena, on the other hand, merely tagged behind Ivan and stood at the back corner. Even if it was just a photo and she barely knew any of them, it was still an honor and a pleasure for Xena.

“Jack... I still feel that this necklace is too expensive. How about we find an opportunity to sell it?”

Once the photos were taken, Selena gazed at the Heart of the Abyss wound around her neck. Her feelings overwhelmed her so much that she blurted her worries to Jack.

Selena’s words stunned Jack. He leaned close to Selena and whispered to her ear, “Honey, I’ll be honest: Such a necklace wasn’t expensive at all, and you now have nearly ten billion in your pocket. It’s not that much at all, you see. Try to think of it this way. Your husband is the Gods of War’s exclusive doctor, so do you think the reward given to me would be so meager?”

Selena took a deep breath after she listened to Jack's reasoning. He was right; he was the exclusive doctor for the nine Gods of War, and that was a great achievement. Besides, the rewards received by the nine Gods of War would be no less than 100 billion. While he was not as honorable as them, Jack must have received 10 billion or so.

With that reassuring thought, Selena playfully rolled her eyes at Jack and pinched his waist. "Jack White, why didn't you say so earlier? Why do you have to worry me?"

Selena then followed up when a thought occurred to her, "Still, you're not at fault. If my mother knew about it, I'm afraid my mother might yell at you and demand a pretty sum. You can't tell her about it. This must remain a secret," Selena suggested thoughtfully.

"Ah, my dear wife is right. I had a hard time buying this necklace for you, so you'll have to keep and wear it, alright?" Jack chuckled wholeheartedly.

"Alright!"

Glancing at the time, Selena turned her head to the hotel's general manager. "You can now serve the dishes!"

"Very well, Mrs. White." Once the performance on-stage was paused, the general manager of the hotel sauntered up to the stage and announced through the microphone, "Everyone, please take your seats and get ready to be served with delicious food!"

The owner of the hotel also went up to the stage and boisterously spoke, "Hello everyone, I'm the owner of this hotel. Today's the happiest and most glorious day in my life, all thanks to Mr. and Mrs. White for ushering in so many distinguished guests and even invited the honorable Nine Great Gods of War!"

The owner momentarily paused before he added, voice louder than before, "Therefore, I've decided that all the expenses on Mr. and Mrs. White's wedding banquet will be on the hotel!"

“What? What was that?! It’ll be on them? It’s all free now? Won’t the owner lose a lot of money?”

Fiona’s face beamed with joy and excitement at the owner’s words. The expenses on the wedding party today was estimated to be at least one or two billion, not to mention that there were so many expensive food and wine. If the words were not from the hotel’s owner himself nor the loud declaration through the microphone, Fiona would have doubted her own ears.

“This can’t be a mistake, right?”

Joan and Andrew were both dumbfounded with the same look of disbelief.

Old Master Taylor, on the other hand, smiled warmly. “Well, what do you know? So many Gods of War have come here today, thus his business from today onward will only skyrocket. He gets to receive such success, all thanks to Jack. The aftermath of this grandest wedding banquet is downright staggering—they’ll be busy counting money. Moreover, business in a seven-star hotel won’t be too good usually because it’s too expensive!”

Old Master Taylor then turned his gaze toward the stage, his eyes filled with wisdom. “The most crucial thing is that today he has taken a photo with us, and the Nine Great Gods of War are in it too. It’s a great attraction point; he can just say that the Nine Great Gods of War had come to their hotel and feasted in a banquet! His business won’t go down after that!”

“Oh, so that’s how it is. I thought so! How could he be so kind and charged us nothing? So there is such a benefit for him!”

Realization dawned on Fiona then, but it did not matter as the hotel charged not a single penny on them. For them, that was a gain!